
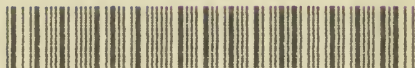


Please  
handle this volume  
with care.


The University of Connecticut  
Libraries, Storrs



910.41/W697v/v.1



3 9153 00206422 0



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2009 with funding from  
Boston Library Consortium Member Libraries









# VOYAGES

OF

## DISCOVERIES ROUND THE WORLD;

Successively undertaken by  
THE HON. COMMODORE BYRON, in 1764; CAPTAINS WALLIS AND  
CARTERET, IN 1766; AND CAPTAIN COOK, IN THE  
YEARS 1768 TO 1780 INCLUSIVE;

COMPREHENDING  
AUTHENTIC AND INTERESTING ACCOUNTS  
OF  
COUNTRIES  
NEVER BEFORE EXPLORED.

WITH THE  
LONGITUDE, LATITUDE, RELATIVE SITUATIONS,  
*Soil, Climate, Natural Productions,*  
CUSTOMS AND MANNERS OF THE INHABITANTS,  
*&c. &c.*

---

---

ILLUSTRATED WITH ENGRAVINGS.

---

---

The whole carefully selected from  
THE JOURNALS OF THE RESPECTIVE COMMANDERS.

---

*By* ROBERT WILSON.

---

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

---

---

LONDON:  
PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY JAMES CUNDEE,  
IVY-LANE, PATERNOSTER-ROW.

---

1806.

910.41

W697v

v. 1

---

## PREFACE.

---

9/2/63  
*THE* several voyages which have been undertaken by order of his present Majesty, during the beginning of his reign, when the kingdom was in a state of profound peace, have afforded much entertainment as well as information; but as the accounts of each have hitherto been presented to the public not only separately but chiefly in a voluminous form, much beyond the reach of readers in general, it was thought that a concise history of all the most remarkable voyages of this nature would be acceptable to every class of readers, as a useful book of reference on all occasions. To accomplish this desirable end, it is the intention of the Editor to comprise in three compact volumes, the substance of the before-mentioned voyages: the first volume will contain those of Commodore Byron and Captains Wallis and Carteret: in the second volume will be given the first and second voyages of Captain Cook and in the third volume will be comprehended an interesting account of his last voyage, in which he

unfortunately lost his life. Thus will be given a regular history, of the various discoveries of the most distinguished circumnavigators; - and by following them round the world, no small degree of knowledge and amusement will be derived from their various remarks and descriptions.

It may, however, be apprehended as our navigators have frequently pursued the same track that many repetitions will occur in a work of this nature; but the Editor begs leave to observe, that he has taken all due pains to avoid superfluous descriptions, by giving occasional references to the accounts (if sufficiently satisfactory) in a preceding voyage; thus the reader will consequently not be delayed in any place he has visited before; and if he should, instead of sameness, he will be presented with much novelty by the additional remarks and discoveries of subsequent navigators—by some strange occurrences among the natives, and by their different interviews with Europeans.—Every chapter, therefore, will exhibit a new picture of human life, which must amply compensate for the frequent representation of the same scene.

To avoid the tediousness of a dull and uninteresting journal, the Editor has passed over those periods of time wherein no remarkable occurrences have taken place. In the first voyage (Commodore Byron's) the events are selected more minutely, this being a general reference for those which succeed it: therefore, the reader, though he may at first be apprehensive of going over the



*same ground, will probably be agreeably surprised by finding every subsequent account more entertaining and interesting than the former.*

*Having said thus much, the Editor respectfully offers his labors for public patronage, in which, should he be so fortunate as to succeed, the reflection of not having spent his time in vain, will be a source of infinite pleasure and satisfaction.*

---





---

# VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD,

PERFORMED BY

*THE HON. COMMODORE BYRON,*

IN HIS MAJESTY'S SHIP THE DOLPHIN, IN THE YEARS 1764, 1765,  
AND 1766.

---

---

FOR THE  
LORD OF THE MOUNTAIN

A NOVEL

IN THREE VOLUMES

BY  
MRS. J. C. B. [Name illegible]

---

---

# BYRON'S VOYAGE.

---

## CHAP. I.

---

Introduction---Passage to Rio de Janeiro---Fruitless search for Pessy's Island---Patagonia described---Passage to Port Famine -- Falkland Islands---Cape Monday---Island of Disappointment discovered.

---

THE Hon. John Byron, who undertook this voyage, was the second son of William, fourth lord Byron, and was born November 8, 1723. Having discovered a strong inclination for a naval life, he was appointed a midshipman in 1731, and afterwards served on board the Wager store-ship, in which vessel he sailed, September 1740, for the South Seas, with the squadron under the orders of commodore Anson. After suffering much distress on account of the loss of that ill-fated ship, and undergoing many difficulties, on his arrival in England he was promoted to be commander of a sloop of war, and from thence, Dec. 30, 1746, to be captain of the Syren frigate. Soon after the conclusion of the war he was appointed to the St. Alban's, and ordered to the coast of Guinea, with commodore Buckle. On his return to England, 1753, he was appointed to the Augusta of 60 guns, and afterwards to the Vanguard of

70 guns. In 1757 he was captain of the *America* of 60 guns. In 1760 he commanded the *Fame* of 74 guns, when he distinguished himself in pursuing and destroying some French ships of war and store-ships, and arrived at Plymouth towards the end of November. Soon after the peace of 1763, a design was formed of sending out vessels for making discoveries of countries hitherto unknown, which was put into execution the following year. The *Dolphin* and *Tamar* were got ready, under the command of commodore Byron; the former was a man of war of the 6th rate, mounting 24 guns; her complement was 150 men, with 3 lieutenants, and 37 petty officers. The *Tamar* was a sloop mounting 16 guns; her complement was 90 men, with 3 lieutenants, and 22 petty officers; the command of her was given to captain Mouat.

On Thursday, June 21, commodore Byron sailed from the Downs with the *Dolphin* and *Tamar*: coming down the river, the *Dolphin* got aground; he therefore put into Plymouth, where she was docked, but did not appear to have received any damage. They sailed July 3, but had the mortification to find the *Tamar* a very heavy sailer. In the night of the 6th, the officer of the first watch saw either a ship on fire, or an extraordinary phenomenon which greatly resembled it, at some distance; it continued to blaze for about half an hour, and then disappeared. On the 12th, they saw the rocks near the island of Madeira, which the seamen call the Deserters, from *desertes*, a name which has been given them from their barren and desolate appearance: the next day they stood in for the road of Funchiale, where about three o'clock in the afternoon they came to an anchor. The commodore waited upon the governor, who received

him with great politeness, and saluted him with eleven guns.

Having completed their water, and procured as much refreshment as possible for the companies of both the ships, every man having 20lbs. weight of onions for his sea-stock, they weighed anchor, and proceeded on their voyage. During the whole of their course from the Lizard, they observed that no fish followed the ship, owing, as supposed, to her being sheathed with copper. By Thursday 26, their water was become foul, and stunk intolerably, but they purified it with a machine, which had been put on board for that purpose; it was a kind of ventilator, by which air was forced through the water in a continual stream, as long as it was necessary.

The next morning they made the island of Sal, one of the Cape de Verds, and seeing several turtle upon the water, they hoisted out their jolly-boat, and attempted to strike them, but they all went down before their people could come within reach of them. On the 30th they came to an anchor in Port Praya bay. The rainy season was already set in, which renders this place very unsafe: a large swell that rolls in from the southward, makes a frightful surf upon the shore, and there is reason every hour to expect a tornado, of which as it is very violent, and blows directly in, the consequences are likely to be fatal; so that after August 15, no ship comes hither till the rainy season is over, which happens in November: for this reason the commodore made all possible haste to fill his water, and get away. He procured three bullocks for the people, but they were little better than carrion, and the weather was so

hot, that the flesh stunk in a few hours after they were killed.

They got again under sail August 2, with a large cargo of fowls, lean goats, and monkeys, which the people contrived to procure for old shirts, jackets, and other articles of the like kind. The intolerable heat and almost incessant rain very soon affected their health, and the men began to fall down in fevers, notwithstanding all the commodore's attention and diligence to make them shift themselves before they slept, when they were wet.

No event worthy of notice happened till Sept. 11, when, about three o'clock in the afternoon, they saw Cape Frio, on the coast of Brazil; and about noon, on Thursday 13, anchored in 18 fathom in the great road of Rio de Janiero. The city, which is large and makes a handsome appearance, is governed by the viceroy of Brazil, who is perhaps in fact as absolute a sovereign as any upon earth. When commodore Byron visited him, he received him in great form; above 60 officers were drawn up before the palace, as well as a captain's guard, who were men of a good appearance, and extremely well clothed. His excellency, with a number of persons of the first distinction belonging to the place, met the commodore at the head of the stairs, upon which 15 guns were fired from the nearest port: they then entered the room of state, and after conversing about a quarter of an hour in French, he took his leave, and was dismissed with the same form that had been used at his reception.

The people in the Dolphin, who had as much fresh meat and greens as they could eat every day, were very

healthy, but there being many sick on board the Tamar, the commodore procured a place for them on shore, where they soon recovered. He also engaged a number of Portuguese caulkers, as the seams of both the ships were very open, who, after having worked some time, rendered them perfectly tight.

On the 16th they weighed anchor, being impatient to get to sea, for the heat here was intolerable; but they lay four or five days above the bar, waiting for the land breeze to carry them out, for there is no getting out with the sea breeze, and the entrance between the first forts is so narrow, and so great a sea breaks in upon them, that it was not without much danger and difficulty they got out at last, and if they had followed the advice of the Portuguese pilot, they had certainly lost the ship. The Portuguese here, carrying on a great trade, make it their business to attend every time a boat comes on shore, and practise every artifice in their power to entice away the crew; if other methods do not succeed, they make them drunk, and immediately send them up the country, taking effectual care to prevent their return, till the ship to which they belong has left the place: by this practice the Dolphin lost five of her men, and the Tamar nine; the former never recovered her's, but the latter had the good fortune to learn where her men were detained, and by sending out a party in the night, surprized them, and brought them back.

They continued their course till Monday 29, having frequently hard gales with sudden gusts, which obliged them to strike their top-gallant masts, and get up the stumps; but this day it blew a storm, with a terrible sea, and the Dolphin laboured so much, that to ease



her, the commodore ordered the two foremost and two aftermost guns to be thrown overboard. The gale continued with nearly equal violence all the rest of the day and all night, so that they were obliged to lie to under a double-reefed main-sail; but the next morning it being more moderate, and veering from N.W. to S. by W. they made sail again, and stood to the westward. They were now in lat.  $35^{\circ} 50'$  S. and found the weather as cold as it is at the same season in England, although the month of November here is a spring month, answering to our May, and they were near 20 degrees nearer the line: to men who within little more than a week had suffered intolerable heat, this change was severely felt; and the sailors, supposing they were to continue in a hot climate during the whole voyage, had contrived to sell not only all their warm clothes, but their bedding, at the different ports where they had touched, now applied in great distress for slops, and were all furnished for the climate.

They now began to see a great number of birds about the ship, many of them very large, of which some were brown and white, and some black: there were among them large flocks of pintadoes, which are somewhat larger than a pigeon, and spotted black and white. On the 4th, they saw a large quantity of rock-weed, and several seals: their latitude was  $38^{\circ} 53'$  S. long.  $58^{\circ}$  W. the variation  $13^{\circ}$  E.\* The prevailing winds here were westerly, so that being continually driven to the eastward, they foresaw that it would not be easy to get in with the coast of Patagonia.

---

\* The longitude in this voyage is reckoned from the meridian of London, W. to 180 degrees, and E. afterwards.



On the 12th, about four o'clock in the afternoon, as the commodore was walking on the quarter-deck, all the people upon the fore-castle called out once, "Land right a-head;" it was then very black almost round the horizon, and they had much thunder and lightning; he looked forward under the foresail, and upon the lee-bow, and saw what at first appeared to be an island, rising in two rude craggy hills, but upon looking to leeward, he saw land joining to it, and running a long way to the south-east; they were then steering south-west, and the commodore sent officers to the mast-head to look out upon the weather-beam, and they called out that they saw land also a great way to the windward. He immediately brought to, and sounded; they still had 52 fathom, but he thought that they were embayed, and rather wished than hoped that they should get clear before night. They made sail, and steered E.S.E. the land still having the same appearance, and the hills looking blue, as they generally do at a little distance in dark rainy weather; and now many of the people said that they saw the sea break upon the sandy beaches; but having steered out for about an hour, what they had taken for land vanished all at once, and to their great astonishment appeared to have been a fog-bank. Though commodore Byron had been almost continually at sea for seven and twenty years, he had never seen such a deception before; others, however, have been equally deceived; for the master of a ship, sometime before, made oath, that he had seen an island between the west end of Ireland and Newfoundland, and even distinguished the trees that grew upon it. Yet it is certain that no such island exists, at least it could never be found, though several ships were afterwards sent out on

purpose to seek it. And in this instance it is certain, that if the weather had not cleared up soon enough for them to see what they had taken for land disappear, every man on board would freely have made oath, that land had been discovered in this situation. Their latitude this day was  $43^{\circ}$  S. longitude  $60^{\circ} 5'$  W. and the variation  $19^{\circ} 30'$  E.

The next day, at four o'clock in the afternoon, the weather being extremely fine, the wind shifted at once to the S.W. and began to blow fresh, the sky at the same time becoming black to windward; in a few minutes all the people that were upon the deck were alarmed with a sudden and unusual noise, like the breaking of the sea upon the shore. The commodore ordered the topsails to be handed immediately; but before it could be done, he saw the sea approaching at some distance in vast billows covered with foam. He called to the people to haul up the foresail, and let go the main-sheet instantly; for he was persuaded, that if they had any sail out when the gust reached them, they should be either overset, or lose all their masts. It reached them however before they could raise the main tack, and laid them upon their beam-ends: the main tack was then cut, for it was become impossible to cast it off; and the main-sheet struck down the first lieutenant, bruised him dreadfully, and beat out three of his teeth; the main topsail, which was not quite handed, was split to pieces. If this squall had taken them in the night, as it was attended with little warning and considerable violence, the ship must have been lost. When it came on, they observed several hundreds of birds flying before it, which expressed their terror by loud shrieks; it lasted about 20 minutes, and then gradually





subsided. The Tamar split her main sail, but as she was to leeward of the Dolphin, she had more time to prepare. In a short time it began to blow very hard again, so that they reefed their main sail, and lay to under it all night. As morning approached, the gale became more moderate, but they had still a great sea, and the wind shifting to S. by W. they stood to the westward under their courses. Soon after it was light, the sea appeared as red as blood, being covered with a small shell fish of that colour, somewhat resembling crayfish, but less, of which they took up great quantities in baskets.

At half an hour past four of the morning of the 5th, they saw land, which had the appearance of an island about eight or nine leagues long; there being no land in sight either to the northward or southward, though by the charts it should be cape St. Helena, which projects from the coast to a considerable distance, and forms two bays, one to the north and the other to the south. As the weather was very fine, the commodore tacked and stood in for it about ten o'clock; but as there were many sunken rocks at about two leagues distance from it, upon which the sea broke very high, and the wind seemed to be gradually dying away, he tacked again, and stood off. The land appeared to be barren and rocky, without either tree or bush; when he was nearest to it he sounded, and had 45 fathom with black muddy ground. To his great misfortune, his three lieutenants and the master were at this time so ill as to be incapable of duty, though the rest of the ship's company were in good health. Their latitude was  $45^{\circ} 21' S.$  longitude  $63^{\circ} 2' W.$  the variation  $19^{\circ} 41' E.$



The next day he shaped his course for Cape Blanco. In the evening it blew extremely hard at S.W. by S. so that they brought to for the night under their mainsail. On the 17th, although it was now almost midsummer in these parts, the weather was, in every respect, much worse than it is in the bay of Biscay at the depth of winter. About six in the evening, having carried all the sail they could, they made land, bearing about S.S.W. which they knew to be Cape Blanco ; but it now began to blow with more violence than ever, and the storm continued all night, with a sea that was continually breaking over them, so that the ship laboured very much. At four the next morning they sounded, and had 40 fathom, with rocky ground ; having stood off in the night, they now wore, and stood in again, the storm still continuing with hail and snow ; and about six o'clock they saw the land again bearing S.W. by W. The Dolphin was now so light, that in a gale of wind she drove bodily to leeward ; so that the commodore was very solicitous to get into Port Desire, that he might put her hold in order, and take in sufficient ballast, to avoid the danger of being caught upon a lee-shore in her present trim. They steered in for the land, with the wind at N.E. and in the evening brought to ; but the wind coming on to the westward, they were driven off in the night. At seven o'clock in the morning they stood in again, steering S.W. by S. by the compass, and soon perceived the sea to break right ahead of them ; they immediately sounded, and shoaled their water from thirteen to seven fathom, soon after deepening it again from seventeen to forty-two ; so that they went over the end of a shoal, which a little farther northward might have been fatal to them.

They continued to stand along the shore all day as near as possible, and in the evening they saw an island at the distance of about six leagues; in the morning of the 20th they stood in for it, and found that it corresponded with Narborough's description of Penguin's island. As Port Desire is said to be about three leagues north-west of this island, the commodore sent the boat to look for it, and when she returned, having found it, he stood in for the land. There were thousands of seals and penguins about the ship, and near Penguin island, several smaller islands, or rather rocks. In the evening they saw a remarkable rock, rising from the water like a steeple, on the south side of the entrance of Port Desire: this rock is an excellent mark to know the harbour, which it would otherwise be difficult to find. At night, there being little wind, they anchored at the distance of four or five miles from the shore; and the next morning, with a breeze from the land, turned up the harbour's mouth; they found it very narrow, with many rocks and shoals about it, and a most rapid tide. They came to an anchor off the harbour in nine fathom. The wind blew very hard the greater part of this day, and there ran an ugly sea where they were stationed; yet the commodore ordered their two boats to sound the harbour, and attended in his own boat himself. They found it very narrow for near two miles, with a tide running at the rate of eight miles an hour: they found also many rocks and shoals, but all the danger shows itself above water. When they came to the shore, commodore Byron landed, and walked a little way into the country, which, as far as he could see, was all downs, without a single tree or scrub. They saw the dung of many beasts, and had a glimpse of four, which

ran away as soon as they came in sight, so that they could not certainly determine what they were, but they believed them to be guanicoes, many of which they afterwards saw come down to the water side: they resemble our deer, but are much larger, the height of some being not less than 13 hands; they are very shy, and very swift. After the commodore returned to his boat, he went further up the harbour, and landed upon an island that was covered with seals, of which they killed above fifty, and among them many that were larger than a bullock, having before half loaded their boat with different kinds of birds, of which, and seals, there are enough to supply the navy of England. Among the birds one was very remarkable; the head resembled that of an eagle, except that it had a large comb upon it; round the neck there was a white ruff, exactly resembling a lady's tippet; the feathers on the back were as black as jet, and as bright as the finest polish could render that mineral; the legs were remarkably strong and large, the talons were like those of an eagle, except that they were not so sharp, and the wings, when they were extended, measured from point to point no less than twelve feet.

The Tamar worked into the harbour with the tide of flood, but the Dolphin kept her station till she should have a leading wind, and the wind shifting to the eastward, they weighed about five o'clock in the afternoon, intending to go up with the evening flood. Before they could get under sail, however, the wind shifted again to N.W. by N. and it being but low water, the ship lying but just within the harbour, and there being no tide to assist them, they were obliged to anchor near the south shore.



During all this night and the next morning the wind blew with great violence: on the 23d, they sounded the harbour higher up, and found the ground softer, and the water not so deep; yet the wind continued to blow so hard that they could not venture to change their station. They had found a small spring of water about half a mile inland, upon the north side of the bay, but it had a brackish taste: the commodore made an excursion of several miles into the country, which he found barren and desolate in every direction, as far as the eye could reach. They had seen many guanicoes at a distance, but they could not get near enough to have a shot at them: they tracked beasts of several kinds in the soil, near a pond of salt water, and among them a very large tyger; they found also a nest of ostrich's eggs, which they eat, and thought very good.

On the 24th, upon slack water, they carried both the ships higher up, and moored them. They had here, at low water, but six fathom; but at spring tides the water rises no less than four fathom and an half, which is seven and twenty feet. The tide in this place is such as perhaps it is not in any other. It happened by some accident that one of their men fell overboard; the boats were all alongside, and the man was an exceeding good swimmer, yet before any assistance could be sent after him, the rapidity of the stream had hurried him almost out of sight; they had however at last the good fortune to save him.

The next day the commodore went a good way up the harbour, and having landed on the north side, they soon after found an old oar of a very singular make, and the barrel of a musket, with the king's broad arrow upon it. The musket barrel had suffered so much from the

weather, that it might be crumbled to dust between the fingers ; he imagined it had been left there by some of the Wager's people, or perhaps by sir John Narborough. Hitherto they had found no kind of vegetables, except a species of wild peas ; but though they had seen no inhabitants, they saw places where they had made their fires, which however did not appear to be recent. While they were on shore, they shot some wild ducks, and a hare ; the hare ran two miles after he was wounded, though it appeared when he was taken up, that a ball had passed quite through his body. They went this day many miles up the country, and had a long chase after one of the guanicoes, which was the largest they had seen ; he frequently stopped to look at them, when he had left them at a good distance behind, and made a noise that resembled the neighing of a horse ; but when they came pretty near him he set out again, and at last the commodore's dog being so tired that he could not run him any longer, he got quite away, and they saw him no more. They shot a hare, however, and a little ugly animal, which stunk so intolerably that none of them could go near him. The flesh of the hares here is as white as snow, and nothing can be better tasted. Some others who were on shore at another part of the bay killed two old guanicoes and a fawn, but were obliged to leave them where they fell, not being able to bring them down to the water side. When they returned in the evening, it blew very hard. About midnight, the storm continuing, their six-oared cutter filled with water and broke adrift ; the boat-keeper, by whose neglect this accident happened, being on board her, very narrowly escaped drowning by catching hold of the stern ladder. As it was tide of flood when she

went from the ship, they knew that she must drive up the harbour; yet as the loss of her would be an irremediable misfortune, the commodore suffered much anxiety till he could send after her in the morning, and it was then some hours before she was brought back, having driven many miles with the stream. In the mean time he sent another party to fetch the guanicoes which some of them had shot the night before, but they found nothing left except the bones, the tygers having eaten the flesh, and even cracked the bones of the limbs to come at the marrow. Several of their people had been fifteen miles up the country in search of fresh water, but could not find the least rill; they had sunk several wells to a considerable depth, where the ground appeared moist, but upon visiting them, they had the mortification to find that, altogether, they would not yield more than thirty gallons in twenty-four hours: this was a discouraging circumstance, especially as their people, among other expedients, had watched the guanicoes, and seen them drink at the salt ponds. It was therefore determined to leave the place as soon as the ship could be got into a little order and the six-oared cutter repaired, which had been hauled up upon the beach for that purpose.

On the 27th, some of the Dolphin's people, who had been ashore on the north side of the bay to try for more guanicoes, found the skull and bones of a man, which they brought off with them, and one young guanicoe alive, which they all agreed was one of the most beautiful creatures they had ever seen; it soon grew very tame, and would suck their fingers like a calf; but, notwithstanding their care and contrivances to feed it, it died in a few days. Some that were on shore with the carpenters, who were repairing the cutter on the south

side of the bay, found two more springs of tolerable water about two miles from the beach, in a direct line from the ship's station. To these springs were sent 20 hands early on Wednesday 28, with some small casks called barecas, and in a few turns they brought on board a tun of water, of which they began to be in great want. In the mean time the commodore went himself about twelve miles up the river in his boat, and the weather then growing bad he went on shore: the river, as far as he could see, was very broad; there were in it a number of islands, some of which were very large. It was upon one of these islands that he went on shore, and he found there such a number of birds, that when they rose they literally darkened the sky, and they could not walk a step without treading upon their eggs. As they kept hovering over their heads at a little distance, the men knocked down many of them with stones and sticks, and carried off several hundreds of their eggs. After some time he left the island, and landed upon the main, where their men dressed and eat their eggs, though there were young birds in most of them. In this excursion the surgeon shot a tyger-cat, a small but very fierce animal; for though it was much wounded, it maintained a very sharp contest with the dog a considerable time before it was killed.

They saw no traces of inhabitants on either side of the river. Owing to the severity of the weather, it was between five and six in the evening they weighed, and steered out E.N.E. with a fresh gale at N.N.W.

As soon as they were out of the bay, they steered in search of Pepys' island. They continued their course with a pleasant gale and fine weather, so that they began to think that this part of the world was not wholly

without a summer. On the 7th, the commodore found himself much further to the northward than he expected, and therefore supposed the ship's way had been influenced by a current. He had now made 80 degrees easting, which is the distance from the main at which Pepys' island is placed in Halley's chart. As he supposed it must lie to the eastward, if indeed it had any existence, he made the Tamar signal to spread early in the afternoon, and as the weather continued to be very clear, they could see between them at least twenty leagues. They steered S.E. by the compass, and at night brought to, being in lat.  $70^{\circ} 18' S$ . The next morning it blew very hard at N.W. by N. and the commodore still thought the island might lie to the eastward; he therefore intended to stand about 30 leagues that way, and if he found no island, to return to the latitude of  $47^{\circ}$  again. But a hard gale coming on, with a great sea, he brought to about six o'clock in the evening under the main-sail; and at six o'clock the next morning, the wind being at W.S.W. they made sail again under their courses to the northward; and so continued Dec. 10, under their courses, with a hard gale from S.W. to N.W. and a great sea. At night, being in latitude  $46^{\circ} 50' S$ . the commodore wore ship, and stood in to the westward again, their ships having spread every day as far as they could be seen by each other; and on the 11th, at noon, being now certain that there could be no such place as is mentioned by Cowley, and laid down by Halley under the name of Pepys' island, he resolved to stand in for the main, and take in wood and water, of which both ships were in great want, at the first convenient place he could find. From this time they continued to haul in for the land as the winds would



permit, and kept a look-out for the islands of Sebald de Wert. A great number of birds were every day about the ship, and large whales were continually swimming by her. The weather in general was fine, but very cold, and they all agreed, that the only difference between the middle of summer here, and the middle of winter in England, lies in the length of the days. On Saturday 15, being in latitude  $50^{\circ} 33'$  S. long.  $66^{\circ} 59'$  W. they were overtaken about six in the evening by a very hard gale at S.W. and a remarkable high sea; the men in the Dolphin expected every moment that it would fill their ship, being much too deep-waisted for such a voyage. The storm continued with unabated violence during the whole night, but, about eight in the morning of Dec. 16, began to subside. At ten they made sail under their courses, and continued to steer for the land till the 18th, when at four in the morning they saw it from the mast-head. As they had little or no wind, they could not get in with the land this day; the next morning, however, it being northerly, they stood in to a deep bay, at the bottom of which there appeared to be a harbour, but they found it barred, the sea breaking quite from one side of it to the other; and at low water they could perceive that it was rocky, and almost all dry; the water was shoal at a good distance from it, and they were in six fathom before they stood out again. In this place there seemed to be plenty of fish, and they saw many porpoises swimming after them, that were as white as snow, with black spots; a very uncommon and beautiful sight. The land here has the same appearance as about Port Desire, all downs, without a single tree.

At break of day on the 20th, they were off Cape Fair-weather, which bore about west at the distance of four

to meet the people, who were, in consequence of his signal, coming from the beach, and as soon as he was within hearing, he hallooed to them, and told them that he would have only one come up with all the tobacco that he could collect from the rest. As soon as the Indians saw this, they recovered from their surprize, and every one returned to his station, except a very old man, who came up to him, and sung a long song: before it was well finished, Mr. Cumming approached with the tobacco, and the commodore could not but smile at the astonishment which he saw expressed in his countenance, upon perceiving himself, though six feet two inches high, become at once a pigmy among giants. After he had presented the tobacco, four or five of the chief men came up, and, as our navigator understood by the signs they made, wanted him to mount one of the horses, and go with them to their habitations, but as it would upon every account have been imprudent to comply, he made signs in return that he must go back to the ship; at this they expressed great concern, and sat down in their stations again. During their pantomimical conference, an old man often laid his head down upon the stones, and shutting his eyes for about half a minute, afterwards pointed first to his mouth, and then to the hills, meaning, as was thought, that if he would stay with them till the morning, they would furnish him with some provisions; but this offer the commodore was obliged to decline. When he left them, not one of them offered to follow, but as long as he could see them continued to sit quietly in their places. He observed that they had with them a number of dogs, with which he supposed they chase the wild animals which serve them for food. The horses were not large, nor in good case,

yet they appeared to be nimble and well broken. The bridle was a leathern thong, with a small piece of wood that served for a bit, and the saddles resembled the pads that are in use among the country people in England. The women rode astride, and both men and women without stirrups; yet they galloped fearlessly over the spit upon which the English landed, the stones of which were large, loose, and slippery.

Soon after their return on board, they got under way, and worked up the streight, which is here about nine leagues broad, with the flood, not with a view to pass through it, but in search of some place where they might get a supply of wood and water, not choosing to trust wholly to the finding of Falkland's islands, which was now their determination to seek. About eight in the evening, the tide of ebb beginning to make, they anchored in 25 fathom.

At three the next morning they weighed with the wind at E. and steered S.W. by W. about twelve miles. During this course they went over a bank, of which no notice has hitherto been taken: at one time they had but six fathom and a half, but in two or three casts they had thirteen. When their water was shallowest, the Asses' Ears bore N.W. by W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  W. distant three leagues, and the north point of the first narrow W. by S. distant about five or six miles. They then steered S.W. by S. near six miles to the entrance of the first narrow, and afterwards S.S.W. about six miles, which brought them through; the tide here was so strong, that the passage was very rapid. During this course, they saw a single Indian upon the south shore who kept waving to them as long as they were in sight. They saw also some guanicoes upon the hills. As soon



as they had passed the first narrow, they entered a little sea, for they did not come in sight of the entrance of the second narrow till they had run two leagues. The land is very high on the north side of the second narrow, which continues for about five leagues, and they steered through it S.W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  W. with soundings from 20 to 25 fathom; they went out of the west end of this narrow about noon, and steered south about eleven leagues for Elizabeth's island; but the wind being right against them, they anchored in seven fathom. In the evening, six Indians upon the island came down to the water-side, and continued waving and hollooming for a long time; but as the crew wanted rest, the commodore was unwilling to employ them in hoisting out a boat, and the Indians seeing their labour fruitless, at length went away. While they were steering from Point Possession to the first narrow, the flood set to the southward, but as soon as they entered the narrow, it set strongly over to the north shore: it flows here at the full and change of the moon about ten o'clock. Between the first and second narrow the flood sets to the S.W. and the ebb to the N.E.; after the west end of the second narrow is past, the course with a leading wind is S. by E. three leagues. Between the islands of Elizabeth and St. Bartholomew the channel is about half a mile over, and the water is deep; they found the flood set very strongly to the southward, with a great rippling, but round the islands the tide set many different ways.

On the 23d, they weighed with the wind at S. by W. and worked between Elizabeth and Bartholomew's island: before the tide was spent, they got over upon the north shore, and anchored in ten fathom. In the evening they weighed and steered S. by E. about five miles along

the north shore, at about one mile's distance, with regular soundings, from seven to thirteen fathom, and every where good ground.

The next morning the commodore went out in his boat, in search of Fresh-water bay; he landed with his second lieutenant upon Sandy Point, and having sent the boat along the shore, they walked abreast of her. Upon the point they found plenty of wood and very good water, and for four or five miles the shore is exceedingly pleasant. Over the point there is a fine level country, with a soil that, to all appearance, was extremely rich, for the ground was covered with flowers of various kinds, that perfumed the air with their fragrance; and among them there were berries almost innumerable, where the blossoms had been shed; they observed that the grass was very good, and that it was intermixed with a great number of pease in blossoms. Among this luxuriance of herbage they saw many hundreds of birds feeding, which, from their form and the uncommon beauty of their plumage they called painted geese. They walked more than twelve miles, and found great plenty of fine fresh water, but not the bay that they sought. They fell in with a great number of the huts or wigwams of the Indians, which appeared to have been very lately deserted, for in some of them the fires which they had kindled were scarcely extinguished; they were in little recesses of the woods, and always close to fresh water. In many places they found plenty of wild celery, and a variety of plants. In the evening they walked back again, and found the ships at anchor in Sandy Point bay, at the distance of about half a mile from the shore. The keen air of this place made the crew so voraciously hungry, that they could have eaten three times their al-

lowance; the commodore was therefore very glad to find some of them employed in hauling the seine, and others on shore with their guns; sixty largemullets were just taken with the seine as he came up, and the gunner had good sport, for the place abounded with geese, teale, snipes, and other birds, that were excellent food.

On the 26th, at eight in the morning, they weighed with the wind at E.N.E. and steered S.S.E. for Port Famine. At noon, St. Anne's point, which is the northernmost point of that port, bore S. by E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. distant three leagues. Along this shore, at the distance of two or three miles, they had a very deep water; but within a mile had ground with 25 or 30 fathom. From St. Anne's point a reef of rocks runs out S.E. by E. about two miles; and at the distance of two cables' length from this reef the water will suddenly shoal from 65 to 35 and 20 fathom. The point itself is very steep, so that there is no sounding till it is approached very near.

The next day at noon, having had little wind and calms, they anchored at Port Famine, close to the shore, and found their situation very safe and convenient; they had shelter from all winds except the S.E. which seldom blows, and if a ship should be driven ashore in the bottom of the bay, she could receive no damage, for it is all fine soft ground. They found drift wood here sufficient to have furnished a thousand sail, so that they had no need to take the trouble of cutting green. The water of Sedger river is excellent, but the boats cannot get in till about two hours flood, because at low water it is very shallow for about three quarters of a mile. The commodore went up it about four miles in his boat, and

and the fallen trees then rendered it impossible to go further; he found it indeed not only difficult but dangerous to get up thus far. The stream is very rapid, and many stumps of trees lie hidden under it: one of these made its way through the bottom of his boat, and in an instant she was full of water. They got on shore as well as they could, and afterwards with great difficulty hauled her up upon the side of the river; but they contrived to stop the hole in her bottom, so that they made a shift to get her down to the river's mouth, where she was soon properly repaired by the carpenter. On each side of this river there are very fine trees, some of a great height, and more than eight feet in diameter, which is proportionably more than eight yards in circumference, so that four men joining hand in hand could not compass them: among others they found the pepper-tree, or winter's back, in great plenty. Among these woods, notwithstanding the coldness of the climate, there are innumerable parrots, and other birds of the most beautiful plumage. The country between this port and Cape Forward, which is distant about four leagues, is extremely fine; the soil appears to be very good, and there are no less than three pretty large rivers, besides several brooks.

While they lay here, the commodore went one day to Cape Forward, and when he set out he intended to have gone further; but the weather became so bad, with heavy rain, that they were glad to stop there, and make a great fire to dry their clothes, which were wet through. From the place where they stopped, the Indians had been gone so lately, that the wood which lay half burnt, where they had made their fire, was still warm; and soon after their fire was kindled, they perceived that an-

other was kindled directly opposite to it, on the Terra del Fuego shore. After they were dried and refreshed, the rain having abated, the commodore walked across the cape, to see how the streight ran, which he found to be about W.N.W. The hills as far as he could see, were of an immense height, very craggy, and covered with snow quite from the summit to the base. He made also another excursion along the shore to the northward, and found the country for many miles exceedingly pleasant, the ground being in many places covered with beautiful and fragrant flowers. He had set up a small tent at the bottom of this bay, close to a little rivulet, and just at the skirts of a wood, soon after the ship came to an anchor, where three men were employed in washing: they slept on shore, but soon after sunset were awakened out of their first sleep by the roaring of some wild beasts, which the darkness of the night, and the solitariness of their situation in this pathless desert, rendered horrid beyond imagination: the tone was hollow and deep, so that the beasts, of whatever kind, were certainly large, and the poor fellows perceived that they drew nearer and nearer, as the sound every minute became more loud. From this time sleep was renounced for the night, a large fire was immediately kindled, and a constant blaze kept up: this prevented the beasts from invading the tent, but they continued to prowl round it at a little distance, with incessant howlings, till the day broke, and then, to the great comfort of the affrighted sailors, they disappeared.

Having continued here till the 4th of January, 1765, and completed the wood and water of both ships, they weighed anchor, being determined to steer back again in search of Falkland's Islands.



The wind continued contrary at N.N.E. till about one o'clock the next day, when it shifted to W.S.W. and blew a fresh gale. They steered N.W. by N. four leagues, and then three leagues north, between Elizabeth and Bartholomew islands; they then steered from the islands N. by E. three leagues to the second narrow; and steered through N.E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. continuing the same course from the second narrow to the first, which was a run of eight leagues. As the wind still continued to blow fresh, they steered through the first narrow against the flood, in the direction of N.N.E.; but about ten o'clock at night, the wind dying away, the flood set them back again into the entrance of the first narrow, where they were obliged to anchor in forty fathom, within two cables' length of the shore.

At one o'clock next morning they weighed, with a light northerly breeze, and about three passed the first narrow a second time. Having now seen the ship safe through, and being quite exhausted with fatigue, the commodore went into his cabin to get some rest. He lay down, and soon fell asleep, but in less than half an hour he was awakened by the beating of the ship upon a bank; he instantly started up, and ran upon the deck, where he soon found that they had grounded upon a hard sand. It was happy for them, that at this time it was stark calm, and he immediately ordered out the boats to carry an anchor astern, where the water was deepest: the anchor took the ground, but before they could work the capstern, in order to heave the ship off to it, she went off by the mere rising of the tide. It happened fortunately to be just low water when she went aground, and there were fifteen feet forward, and six fathom a very little way astern. The master said,



that at the last cast of the lead before they were aground, he had thirteen fathom, so that the water shoaled at once no less than 63 feet. This bank is extremely dangerous, especially as it lies directly in the fair way between Cape Virgin Mary and the first narrow, and just in the middle between the south and north shores. It is more than two leagues long, and full as broad; in many places also it is very steep.

About six o'clock in the morning they anchored in 15 fathom, the shoal bearing N.N.W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. at the distance of about half a mile. At noon they weighed with a light breeze at N.E. and worked with the ebb tide till two; but finding the water shoal, they anchored again in six fathom and an half, at about the distance of half a mile from the south side of the shoal. The Tamar, in the mean time, as she was endeavouring to come near them, was very near going on shore, having once got into three fathom, but soon after came to an anchor in the channel between the shoal and the north shore.

The next morning, about eight o'clock, they weighed with little wind at W.S.W. and steered about half a mile S.E. by E. when, having deepened their water to 13 fathom, they steered between the E. and E.N.E. along the south side of the shoal, at the distance of about seven miles from the south shore, keeping two boats at some distance, one on each bow, to sound. The depth of water was very irregular, varying continually between nine and fifteen fathom; and upon hauling nearer to the shore, they had very soon no more than seven fathom; the boats went over a bank, upon which they had six fathom and a half, it being then low water, but within the bank they had thirteen fathom. At noon they were to the eastward of the shoal, and as they hauled over to

the north shore, they soon deepened their water to 20 fathom. From this situation they steered N.E. by E. for the south end of the spit which runs to the southward of the cape, and had no soundings with five and twenty fathom. On the 8th, at eight in the morning, their latitude was  $51^{\circ} 50'$  and their soundings were eleven and twelve fathom. They now brought to for the Tamar, who had come through the north channel, and was some leagues astern; and while they were waiting for her coming up, the officer of the watch informed the commodore that the head of the main-mast was sprung; he immediately went up to look at it himself, and found it split almost in a strait line perpendicularly for a considerable length, but he could not discover exactly how far the fissure went, for the cheeks that were upon the mast. They imagined this to have happened in the very hard gale that had overtaken them some time before, but as it was of more importance to contrive how to repair the damage, than discover how it happened, they immediately put on a strong fish, and woolled it so well, that they had reason to hope the mast would be as serviceable as ever.

About seven in the evening of the 11th, the commodore thought he saw land a-head of them, but the Tamar being some leagues astern, he wore ship, and made an easy sail off; the next morning, at break of day, he stood in again, the wind having shifted in the night to N.W. and about four o'clock he recovered sight of the land a-head, which had the appearance of three islands: he imagined they might be the islands of Sebald de Wert, but intending to stand between them, he found that the land which had appeared to be separated, was joined by some very low ground, which formed a deep bay.

As soon as he had made this discovery, he tacked and stood out again, and at the same time saw land a great way to the southward. As he was hauling out of this bay, he saw a long, low shoal of rocks, stretching out more than a league to the northward of them, and another of the same kind lying between that and what they had taken for the northermost of de Wert's islands. This land, except the low part, which is not seen till it is approached near, consists of high, craggy, barren rocks, which in appearance very much resemble Staten Land. When he had got so near as to discover the low land, he was quite embayed, and if it had blown hard at S.W. so great a sea must have rolled in here as would have rendered it almost impossible to claw off the shore; all ships, therefore, that may hereafter navigate these parts, should avoid falling in with it. The seals and birds here are innumerable; they saw also many whales spouting about them, several of which were of an enormous size. In the evening they brought to, and at day-break the next morning (Sunday 13) stood in for the north part of the island, by the coast of which they had been embayed: when they had got about four miles to the eastward, it fell calm, and rained with great violence, during which there arose a most terrible swell; it came from the westward, and ran so quick and so high, that they expected every moment it would break; it set them very fast towards the shore, which is as dangerous as any in the world, and they could see the surge breaking at some distance from it, mountains high; happily, a fresh gale sprung up at S.E. with which, to their great joy, they were able to stand off. After they had got to some distance, the weather being thick, and

it raining very hard, they brought to. Their latitude was  $51^{\circ}$  S. and longitude  $63^{\circ} 22'$  W.

The 14th, the weather having cleared up, and the wind shifted to the S.S.W. they steered along the shore S.E. by E four miles, and saw a low flat island full of high tufts of grass, resembling bushes, bearing S. at the distance of two or three leagues, the northermost land at the same time bearing W. distant about six leagues; they had here about 38 fathom, with rocky ground. They continued their course along the shore six leagues further, and then saw a low rocky island bearing S.E. by E. distant about five miles: here they brought to, and having sounded, they had 40 fathom water, with a bottom of white sand. This island is about three leagues distant from the land they were coasting, which here forms a very deep bay. They saw the sea break at a good distance from the shore, and during the night stood off and on. The next morning, at three o'clock, they made sail, and stood in for the land to look for a harbour. At eight o'clock they saw an opening, which had the appearance of an harbour, bearing E.S.E. and being between two and three leagues distant. Upon this discovery they brought to, and sent a boat from each of the ships to examine the opening; but it beginning to blow very hard soon after, and the weather growing thick, with heavy rain, they were obliged to stand out to sea with both the ships, and it was not without great difficulty that they cleared the two rocky islands which were to the eastward of them. They had now a great sea, and the commodore began to be under much concern lest they should be blown off, and their people in the boats left behind: however, about three

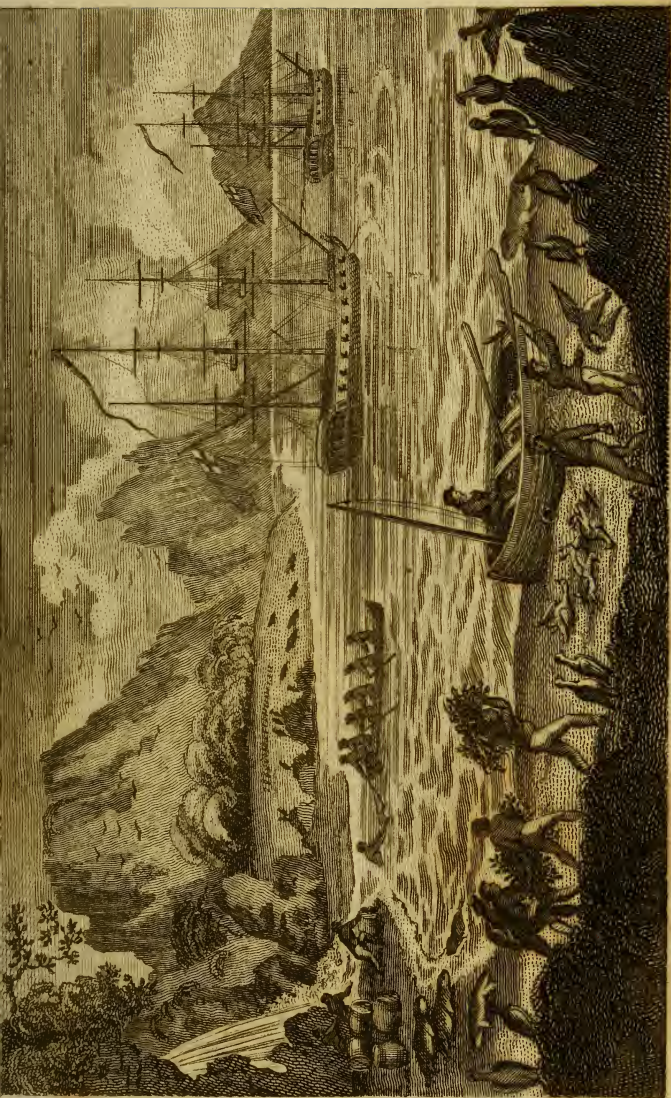
in the afternoon, the weather clearing up, he tacked and stood in again, and presently after had the satisfaction to see one of the boats, though it was a long way to leeward of them. He immediately bore down to her, and found her to be the Tamar's boat, with Mr. Hindman, the second lieutenant, on board, who having been on shore in the opening, had ventured off, notwithstanding the great sea and bad weather, to inform him that he had found a fine harbour: they immediately stood in for it, and found it equally beyond his report and their expectations; the entrance is about a mile over, and every part of it is perfectly safe; the depth of water, close to the shore, being from ten to seven fathom. They found this harbour to consist of two little bays on the starboard side, where ships may anchor in great safety, and in each of which there is a fine rivulet of fresh water. Soon after they entered an harbour of much greater extent, which the commodore called Port Egmont, in honor of the earl, who was then first lord of the admiralty. The mouth of it is S.E. distant seven leagues from the low rocky island, which is a good mark to know it by; within the island, and at about the distance of two miles from the shore, there is between 17 and 18 fathom water; and about three leagues to the westward of the harbour, there is a remarkable white sandy beach, off which a ship may anchor till there is an opportunity to run in. In standing in for this sandy beach, the two low rocky islands which they found it difficult to clear, when the weather obliged them to stand off, appear to the eastward, and Port Egmont is about sixteen leagues from the north end of these islands. They moored in ten fathom, with fine holding ground. The whole navy of England



might ride here in perfect security from all winds. Soon after the ship came to an anchor, the other boat, which had remained on shore when Mr. Hindman put off, came on board. In the southermost part of the harbour there are several islands, but there is no passage out for a ship; the commodore went, however, through in his boat, about seven leagues distant from where the ship lay, and entered a large sound, which is too much exposed to a westerly wind for ships to lie in it safely; and the master of the Tamar, who had been round in her boat, and entered this sound from without, reported that many shoals lay off it, so that if the harbour was ever so good, it would not be prudent to attempt getting in.

In every part of Port Egmont there is fresh water in the greatest plenty, and geese, ducks, snipes, and other birds are so numerous, that their people grew tired of them: it was a common thing for a boat to bring off 60 or 70 fine geese, without expending a single charge of powder and shot, for the men knocked down as many as they pleased with stones; wood, however, is wanting here, except a little which is found adrift along the shore, which they imagined came from the Straights of Magellan. Among other refreshments, which are in the highest degree salutary to those who have contracted scorbutic disorders, during a long voyage, there are wild celery and wood sorrel, in the greatest abundance; nor is there any want of mussels, clams, cockles, and limpets; the seals and penguins are innumerable, so that it is impossible to walk upon the beach without first driving them away; and the coast abounds with sea-lions, many of which are of an enormous size. They found this animal very formidable;







the commodore was once attacked by one of them very unexpectedly, and it was with the utmost difficulty that he could disengage himself from him; at other times they had many battles with them, and it has sometimes afforded a dozen of them an hour's work to dispatch one of them: the commodore had with him a very fine mastiff dog, and a bite of one of these creatures almost tore him to pieces. Nor were these the only dangerous animals that they found here, for the master having been sent out one day to sound the coast upon the south shore, reported, at his return, that four creatures of great fierceness, resembling wolves, ran up to their bellies in the water to attack the people in his boat, and that as they happened to have no fire-arms with them, they had immediately put the boat off into deep water. The next morning after this happened, commodore Byron went upon the south shore himself, where they found one of the largest sea lions they had ever seen: as the boat's crew were now well armed, they immediately engaged him, and during the contest one of the other animals was seen running towards them; he was fired at before he came up, and was presently killed. When any of these creatures got sight of their people, though at ever so great a distance, they ran directly at them, and no less than five of them were killed this day. They were always called wolves by the ship's company, but, except in their size and the shape of the tail, they bore a greater resemblance to a fox. They are as big as a middle-sized mastiff, and their fangs are remarkably long and sharp. There are great numbers of them upon this coast, though it is not perhaps easy to guess how they first came hither, for these islands are at least one hundred leagues distant from the main; they bur-

row in the ground like a fox, and they have frequently seen pieces of seal which they have mangled, and the skins of penguins lie scattered about the mouths of their holes. To get rid of these creatures they set fire to the grass, so that the country was in a blaze as far as the eye could reach, for several days, and they could see them running in great numbers to seek other quarters. The commodore dug holes in many places, about two feet deep, to examine the soil, which they found first a black mould and then a light clay. While they lay here, they set up the armourer's forge on shore, and completed a great deal of iron work that was much wanted. The crew had every morning an excellent breakfast made of portable soup, and wild celery, thickened with oatmeal: neither was their attention confined wholly to themselves, for the surgeon of the Tamar surrounded a piece of ground near the watering-place with a fence of turf, and planted it with many esculent vegetables as a garden, for the benefit of those who might hereafter come to this place. Of this harbour, and all the neighbouring islands the commodore took possession for his majesty king George the Third of Great Britain, by the name of Falkland's Island; and there is little reason to doubt that they are the same land to which Cowley gave the name of Pepys' Island.

Having continued in Port Egmont till Sunday the 27th, they sailed again at eight o'clock in the morning with the wind at S.S.W. but they were scarcely got out of the port before it began to blow very hard, and the weather became so thick, that they could not see the rocky islands. In a short time, however, they had the satisfaction to see the weather become clear, though it continued to blow very hard the whole day. They



steered along the shore east by the compass, and after having run about five leagues, they saw a remarkable head-land, with a rock at a little distance from it, bearing E.S.E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. distant three leagues. This head-land the commodore called Cape Tamar. Having continued the same course five leagues further, they saw a rock about five leagues from the main bearing N.E. at the distance of four or five leagues, which he called the Edystone, and then steered between it and a remarkable head-land, which he called Cape Dolphin, in the direction of E.N.E. five leagues farther. From Cape Tamar to Cape Dolphin, a distance of about eight leagues, the land forms, what commodore Byron thought a deep sound, and called it Carlisle Sound, but which has since appeared to be the northern entrance of the streight between the two principal islands. In the part that he supposed to be the bottom of the sound, they saw an opening which had the appearance of an harbour. From Cape Dolphin they steered along the shore, E  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. 16 leagues, to a low flat cape or head-land, and then brought to. In this day's run, the land, for the most part resembled the east side of the coast of Patagonia, not having so much as a single tree, or even a bush, being all downs, with here and there a few of the high tufts of grass that they had seen at Port Egmont. During the night they had forty fathom water, with rocky ground.

The next morning, at four o'clock, they made sail, the low flat cape then bearing S.E. by E. distant five leagues; at half an hour after five it bore S.S.E. distant two leagues, and they then steered from it E.S.E. five leagues, to three low rocky islands, which lie about two miles from the main. From these islands they steered

S.S.E. to two other low islands, which lie at the distance of about one mile from the main. Between these islands the land forms a very deep sound, which the commodore called Berkeley's Sound. In the south part of this sound there is an opening, which has the appearance of an harbour; and about three or four miles to the southward of the south point of it, at the distance of about four miles from the main, some rocks appear above the water, upon which the sea breaks very high, there being here a great swell from the southward. When they were abreast of these breakers, they steered S.W. by S. about two leagues, when the southermost land in sight, which they took to be the southermost part of Falkland's Islands, bore W.S.W. distant five leagues. The coast now began to be very dangerous, there being in all directions rocks and breakers at a great distance from the shore. The country also inland had a more rude and desolate appearance; the high ground, as far as they could see, being all barren craggy rocks, very much resembling that part of Terra del Fuego which lies near Cape Horn. As the sea now rose every moment, the commodore was afraid of being caught here upon a lee-shore, in which case there would have been very little chance of his getting off, and therefore he tacked, and stood to the northward. At eight in the evening, the wind shifting to the S.W. they stood to the westward.

They continued to make sail for Port Desire till Wednesday the 6th of February, when about one o'clock in the afternoon they saw land, and stood in for the port. During the run from Falkland's Islands to this place, the number of whales about the ship was so great as to render the navigation dangerous; they were very near



striking upon one, and another blew the water in upon the quarter-deck ; they were much larger than any they had seen. As they were standing in for Port Desire, they saw the Florida, a store-ship that they expected from England, and at four they came to an anchor off the harbour's mouth.

The next morning, Mr. Dean, the master of the store-ship, came on board ; and finding from his report, that his foremast was sprung, and his ship little better than a wreck, commodore Byron determined to go into the harbour, and try to unload her there, although the narrowness of the place, and the rapidity of the tides, render it a very dangerous situation. They got in, in the evening, but it blowing very hard in the night, both the Tamar and the store-ship made signals of distress ; the commodore immediately sent his boats to their assistance, who found that, notwithstanding they were moored, they had been driven up the harbour, and were in the greatest danger of being on shore. They were brought back, not without great difficulty, and the very next night they drove again, and were again saved by the same efforts from the same danger. As the commodore now found that the store-ship was continually driving about the harbour, and every moment in danger of being lost, he gave up, with whatever reluctance, his design of taking the provisions out of her, and sent all his carpenters on board to fish the mast, and make such other repairs as they could. He also lent her his forge to complete such iron-work as they wanted, and determined, the moment she was in a condition to put to sea, to take her with them into the streight of Magellan, and unload her there. While this was doing, capt. Mouat, who commanded the Tamar, informed him that his rud-

der was sprung, and that he had reason to fear it would in a short time become wholly unserviceable. Upon this the commodore ordered the carpenter of the Dolphin on board the Tamar, to examine the rudder, and he reported it to be so bad, that in his opinion the vessel could not proceed on her voyage without a new one. A new one, however, it was not in their power to procure at this place, and he therefore desired capt. Mouat to get his forge on shore, and secure his rudder with iron clamps in the best manner he could, hoping that in the streight a piece of timber might be found, which would furnish him with a better.

The store-ship being ready for sea on the 13th, the commodore put on board of her one of his petty officers, who was well acquainted with the streight, and three or four of his seamen to assist in navigating her; he also lent her two of his boats, and took those belonging to her, which were staved, on board to get them repaired, and then he ordered her master to put to sea directly, and make the best of his way to Port Famine; though he did not doubt but that he should come up with her long before she got thither, as he intended to follow her as soon as the Tamar was ready, and capt. Mouat had told him, that the rudder having been patched together, by the joint labour and skill of the carpenter and smith, he should be in a condition to proceed the next morning.

They accordingly put to sea the next morning; and a few hours afterwards being abreast of Penguin Island, they saw the store-ship a long way to the eastward. Nothing remarkable occurred during the four following days. On the 19th, and the next morning, they had variable winds with calms; in the afternoon, therefore,

the commodore hoisted out the boats, and towed round St. Anne's Point into Port Famine : at six in the evening they anchored.

Here they continued till Monday 25, when both the Dolphin and Tamar having taken out of the store-ship as much provision as they could stow, commodore Byron gave the master of her orders to return to England as soon as she could get ready, and with the Tamar sailed from Port Famine, intending to push through the streight before the season should be too far advanced. At noon they were three leagues distant from St. Anne's Point, which bore N.W. and three or four miles distant from Point Shutup, which bore S.S.W. Point Shutup bears from St. Anne's Point S.  $\frac{1}{4}$  E. by the compass, and they are about four or five leagues asunder. Between these two points there is a flat shoal, which runs from Port Famine before Sedger river, and three or four miles to the southward. They steered S.S.W. with little wind along the shore, from Point Shutup towards Cape Forward. From Cape Shutup to Cape Forward, the course by compass is S.W. by S. and the distance is seven leagues. At eight o'clock in the evening Cape Forward bore N.W.  $\frac{1}{7}$  W. and was distant about a mile, and they brought to for the night. This part of the streight is eight miles over, and off the cape they had 40 fathoms within half a cable's length of the shore. About four o'clock in the morning of the 26th, they made sail ; at ten, they had fresh gales at W.N.W, and at intervals sudden squalls, so violent as to oblige them to clue all up every time they came on. They kept, however, working to windward, and looking out for an anchoring place, endeavouring at the same time to reach a bay about two leagues to the westward of Cape Forward. At five

o'clock the commodore sent a boat with an officer into this bay to sound, who finding it fit for their purpose, they entered it, and about six o'clock anchored in nine fathom.

At six o'clock the next morning they weighed, and continued their course through the streight; from Cape Holland to Cape Gallant, which are distant about eight leagues, the coast lies W. S. by the compass. Cape Gallant is very high and steep, and between this and Cape Holland lies a reach about three leagues over, called English Reach. About five miles south of Cape Gallant lies a large island, called Charles's Island, which it is necessary to keep to the northward of: they sailed along the north shore of it, at about two miles distance, and sometimes much less. A little to the eastward of Cape Holland is a fair sandy bay, called Wood's Bay, in which there is good anchoring. The mountains on each side the streight are higher, and of a more desolate appearance, than any other in the world, except perhaps the Cordeliers, both being rude, craggy, and steep, and covered with snow from the top to the bottom.

From Cape Gallant to Passage Point, which are distant about three leagues, the coast lies W. by N. by compass. Passage Point is the east point of Elizabeth's Bay, and is low land, with a rock lying off it. Between this and Cape Gallant there are several islands; some of them are very small; but the easternmost (Charles's Island) is two leagues long; the next is called Monmouth's Island, and the westernmost, Rupert's island. Rupert's Island lies S. by E. of Point Passage. These islands make the streight narrow: between Point Passage and Rupert's Island it is not more than two miles

over, and it is necessary to go to the northward of them all, keeping the north shore on board; they sailed within two cables' length of it, and had no ground with forty fathom. At six in the evening the wind shifted to the westward, upon which they stood in for Elizabeth's Bay, and anchored in ten fathom with very good ground; the best anchoring, however, is in thirteen fathom, for there was but three or four fathom about a cable's length within them. In this bay there is a good rivulet of fresh water. They found the flood here set very strong to the eastward, and according to their calculation it flows at the full and change of the moon about twelve o'clock. They found the variation two points easterly.

At two o'clock in the afternoon of the 28th, the wind being between N.W. and W. with fresh gales and squalls, they made the signal to weigh, and just as they had got the Dolphin over the anchor, a violent gust brought it home: the ship immediately drove into shoal water, within two cable's length of the shore, upon which they let go the small bower in four fathom, and had but three fathom under their stern: the stream anchor was carried out with all possible expedition, and by applying a purchase to the capstern, the ship was drawn toward it; they then heaved up both the bower anchors, slit the stream cable, and with the gib and stay-sails ran out into ten fathom, and anchored with the best bower exactly in the situation from which they had been driven.

At five o'clock the next morning (March 1) the wind being northerly and the weather moderate, they weighed again, and at seven passed Muscle Bay, which lies on the southern shore about a league to the westward of Elizabeth's Bay. At eight they were abreast of Bache-



lors River, which is on the north shore, about two leagues W. by N. from Elizabeth's Bay. At nine they passed St. Jerom's Sound, the entrance of which is about a league from Bachelor's river; when St. Jerom's Sound was open, it bore N.W. They then steered W.S.W. by the compass, for Cape Quod, which is three leagues distant from the southermost point of the sound. Between Elizabeth Bay and Cape Quod is a reach about four miles over, called Crooked Reach. At the entrance of Jerom's Sound, on the north side, they saw three or four fires, and soon afterwards perceived two or three canoes paddling after them. At noon, Cape Quod bore W.S.W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. distant four or five miles, and soon after, having light airs and calms, they drove to the eastward with the flood tide; in the mean time the canoes came up, and after having paddled about them some time, one of them had the resolution to come on board. The canoe was of bark, very ill made, and the people on board, which were four men, two women, and a boy, were the poorest wretches they had ever seen. They were all naked, except a stinking seal skin that was thrown loosely over their shoulders; they were armed, however, with bows and arrows, which they readily gave in return for a few beads and other trifles. The arrows were made of a reed, and pointed with a green stone; they were about two feet long, and the bows were three feet; the cord of the bow was the dried gut of some animal. In the evening they anchored abreast of Bachelor's river in fourteen fathom. The entrance of the river bore N. by E. distant one mile, and the northermost point of St. Jerom's Sound W.N.W. distant three miles. About three quarters of a mile eastward of Bachelor's river is a shoal, upon which there is not more



than six feet water when the tide is out: it is distant about half a mile from the shore, and may be known by the weeds that are upon it. The tide flows here, at the full and change of the moon, about one o'clock. Soon after they were at anchor, several Indians came on board, and the commodore made them all presents of beads, ribands, and other trifles, with which they appeared to be greatly delighted. This visit he returned, by going on shore among them, taking only a few people with him in his jolly-boat, that he might not alarm them by numbers. They received them with great expressions of kindness, and to make them welcome, they brought some berries which they had gathered for that purpose, and which, with a few mussels, seem to be a principal part, if not the whole of their subsistence.

At five o'clock in the morning of the 2d, they weighed and towed with the tide, but at ten, having no wind, and finding that they drove again to the eastward, they anchored, with the stream anchor in fifteen fathom, upon a bank which lies about half a mile from the north shore. After veering about two thirds of a cable, they had five and forty fathom alongside, and still deeper water at a little distance. At twelve o'clock at night it began to blow very hard at W.N.W. and at two the next morning, the ship drove off the bank: they immediately hove the anchor up, and found both the flukes broken off; till three o'clock they had no ground, and then they drove into sixteen fathom at the entrance of St. Jerom's Sound: as it still blew a storm, they immediately let go the best bower, and veered to half a cable. The anchor brought the ship up at so critical a moment, that they had but five fathom, and even that depth was among breakers.

They let go the small bower under foot, and at five, finding the tide set to the westward, and the weather more moderate, they got up both the anchors, and kept working to windward. At ten, they found the tide setting again strongly to the eastward, and they therefore sent the boat back to seek for an anchoring-place, which she found in a bay on the north shore, about four miles to the eastward of Cape Quod, and a little within some small islands: they endeavoured to get into this bay, but the tide rushed out of it with such violence, that they found it impossible, and at noon bore away for York-road, at the entrance of Bachelor's river, where they anchored about an hour afterwards.

At six o'clock on the morning of the 4th they weighed, and worked with the tide, which set the same as the day before, but they could not gain an anchoring-place, so that at noon they bore away for York-road again. At six the next morning they weighed again, and at eight, it being stark calm, they set the boats ahead to tow: at eleven, however, the tide set so strong from the westward, that they could not gain the bay on the north shore, which the boat had found for them the preceding day, and which was an excellent harbour fit to receive five or six sail; they were therefore obliged to anchor on a bank in forty-five fathom, with the stream anchor.

The commodore now sent an officer to the westward, to look out for a harbour, but he did not succeed. It was calm the rest of the day, and all night, the tide setting to the eastward from the time they anchored till six o'clock the next morning, when they weighed, and were towed by the boats to the westward. At eight a fine breeze sprung up at W.S.W. and W. and at noon Cape Quod bore E. by S. at the distance of about five miles.

In this situation the commodore sent the boats out again to look for an anchoring-place, and about noon, by their direction, they anchored in a little bay on the south shore, opposite to Cape Quod, in five and twenty fathom, with very good ground; in this place they had shell-fish of various kinds in great plenty. The *Tamar*, not being able to work up to them, anchored about two o'clock in the bay on the north shore, about six miles to the eastward of Cape Quod. During the night it was stark calm, but in the morning of the 7th, having little airs of wind westerly, they weighed about eight o'clock, and worked with the tide. About one o'clock the *Tamar* anchored in the bay on the south shore, opposite to Cape Quod, which the *Dolphin* had just left, and they continued working to windward till seven in the evening, when they anchored in a small bay on the north shore, about five leagues to the westward of Cape Quod with very good ground. This bay may be known by two large rocks that appear above water, and a low point, which makes the east part of the bay. During the night it was calm, and the weather became very foggy; but about ten the next morning it cleared up, and the commodore went on shore. He found abundance of shell-fish, but saw no traces of people. In the afternoon, while the people were filling water, he went up a deep lagoon, which lies just round the westernmost rock: at the head of it he found a very fine fall of water, and on the east side several little coves, where ships of the greatest draught may lie in perfect security. He saw nothing else worthy of notice, and therefore, having filled their boat with very large mussels, they returned.

At seven o'clock on the morning of the 9th, they weighed and towed out of the bay, and at eight saw the Tamar very far astern steering after them. At noon they had little wind at E.N.E. but at five o'clock it shifted to W.N.W. and blew fresh. At about half an hour after seven, they had a very hard squall, and the weather being then exceedingly thick, they suddenly perceived a reef of rocks close under their lee-bow, upon which the sea broke very high: they had but just time to tack clear of them, and if the ship had missed stays, every soul of them must inevitably have perished. These rocks lie at a great distance from the south shore, and are about three leagues to the north of Cape Upright. At nine the weather cleared a little, and they saw the entrance of Long Reach, upon which they bore away, keeping nearest the south shore, in hopes of finding an anchoring-place. At ten, they had strong gales and thick weather, with hard rain, and at noon they were again abreast of Cape Monday, but could find no anchoring place, which, however, they continued to seek, still steering along the south shore, and were soon after joined by the Tamar, who had been six or seven leagues to the eastward of them all night. At six in the evening they anchored in a deep bay, about three leagues to the eastward of Cape Monday: they let go the anchor in five and twenty fathom, near an island in the bottom of the bay; but before they could bring up the ship they were driven off, and the anchor took the ground in about fifty fathom. In the night they had fresh gales westerly, with sudden squalls and hard rain; but in the morning the weather became more moderate, though it was still thick, and the rain continued. As a great

swell set into this place, and broke very high upon the rocks near which they lay, the commodore got up the anchor, and warped the ship to a bank where the *Tamar* was riding: they let go their anchor in fourteen fathom, and moored the stream anchor to the eastward, in forty-five fathom. In the bottom of this bay there is a bason, at the entrance of which there is but three fathom and an half at low water, but within there is ten fathom, and room enough for six or seven sail to lie where no wind can hurt them.

Here they continued till the 11th, and during all that time had one continued storm, with impenetrable fogs, and incessant rain. On the 12th, the commodore sent out the boat, with an officer, to look for harbours on the southern shore: the boat was absent two days, and then returned, with an account that there were five bays between the ship's station and Cape Upright, where they might anchor in great safety. The officer said, that near Cape Upright he had fallen in with a few Indians, who had given him a dog, and that one of the women had offered him a child which was sucking at her breast. It is scarcely necessary to say that he refused it; but the offer seems to degrade these poor forlorn savages more than any thing in their appearance or manner of life: it must be a strange depravity of nature, that leaves them destitute of affection for their offspring, or a most deplorable situation that impresses necessities upon them by which it is surmounted. Some hills, which when they first came to this place, had no snow upon them, were now covered, and the winter of this dreary and inhospitable region seemed to have set in at once: the poor seamen not only suffered much by the cold, but



had scarcely ever a dry thread about them : the commodore therefore distributed among the crews of both the ships, not excepting the officers, two bales of a thick woollen stuff, called Fearnought, which is provided by the government, so that every body on board had now a warm jacket, which at this time was found both comfortable and salutary.

At eight o'clock the next morning they weighed and made sail, and at three o'clock in the afternoon they were once more abreast of Cape Monday, and at five anchored in a bay on the east side of it. On the 16th they weighed, and found that the palm was gone from the small bower anchor. The wind was at W.N.W. with hard rain; at eight o'clock they found a strong current setting them to the eastward, and in the afternoon Cape Monday bore W.N.W. distant two miles. The Tamar being to windward of the Dolphin, fetched into the bay, and anchored again. They continued to lose ground upon every tack, and therefore, at two o'clock, anchored upon the southern shore in sixteen fathom, about five miles to the eastward of Cape Monday. At three, however, they weighed again, for the boat having sounded round the ship, found the ground rocky. The wind was N.W. with hard rain, and they continued working all the rest of the day and all night, every man on board being on deck the whole time, and every one wet to the skin, for the rain, or rather sheets of water that came down, did not cease a moment.

In the morning of the 17th, they had again the mortification to find that, notwithstanding all their labor, they had lost ground upon every tack, in consequence of the current, which continued to set with great force to the



eastward. At eight o'clock they bore away, and at nine anchored in the same bay from which they sailed on the 15th.

The wind continued W. and W.N.W. on the 18th and 19th, without any tide to the westward, and the weather was exceedingly bad, with hard squalls and heavy rain. In the mean time the commodore had sent an officer with a boat to sound a bay on the north shore, but he found no anchorage in it. At six o'clock the next morning a hard squall coming on, the ship drove, and brought the anchor off the bank into forty fathom, but by heaving up the bower, and carrying out the kedge anchor, they got the ship on the bank again. At eight the day following, though the wind was from W. N.W. to S.W. they weighed, and once more stood out of the bay: the current still set very strongly to the eastward, but at noon they found that they had gained about a mile and a half in a contrary direction. The wind now became variable, from S.W. to N.W. and at five in the afternoon the ship had gained about four miles to the westward; but not being able to find an anchoring-place, and the wind dying away, they drove again very fast to the eastward with the current. At six, however, they anchored in forty fathom, with very good ground, in a bay about two miles to the westward of that from which they sailed in the morning. A swell rolled in here all night, so that their situation was by no means desirable, and therefore, although the wind was still at W.S.W. they weighed and made sail about eight o'clock the next day. They had likewise incessant rain, so that the people were continually wet, which was a great aggravation of their fatigue; yet they were still cheerful, and what was yet less to be expected, still healthy.

This day, to their great joy, they found the current setting to the westward, and they gained ground very fast. At six in the evening they anchored in the bay on the east side of Cape Monday, where the Tamar lay in 18 fathom, the pitch of the Cape bearing W. by N. distant half a mile. They found this place very safe, the ground being excellent, and there being room enough for two or three ships of the line to moor.

On the 23d they weighed, and soon after they made sail opened the South Sea, from whence an enormous swell rolled in upon them. At four o'clock in the afternoon they anchored in a very good bay, with a deep sound at the bottom of it, by which it may be known, about a league to the eastward of Cape Upright, in 14 fathom. The extreme point of the bay bore from N.W. to N.E. by E. and Cape Upright W.N.W. about a cable's length to the eastward of a low island, which makes the bay.

At three o'clock in the afternoon of the 24th, the commodore sent a boat, with an officer from each ship, to look for anchoring-places to the westward; but at four in the afternoon they returned without having been able to get round Cape Upright.

The next morning the boat was sent again, and about six in the evening they returned, having been about four leagues, and found two anchoring-places, but neither of them were very good. They made sail, however, about eight in the forenoon of the 26th, and at three Cape Upright bore E.S.E. distant about three leagues, a remarkable large cape on the north shore bearing N.E. distant four or five miles. This cape, which is very lofty and steep, lies N.N.W. by compass from Cape Upright, at the distance of about three leagues.

The south shore in this place had a very bad appearance, many sunken rocks lying about it to a considerable distance, upon which the sea breaks very high. At four the weather became very thick, and in less than half an hour they saw the south shore at the distance of about a mile, but could get no anchoring-place; they therefore tacked, and stood over to the north shore. At half an hour after six, the commodore made the Tamar a signal to come under their stern, and ordered her to keep ahead of them all night, and to show lights, and fire a gun every time she changed her tack.

At seven, it cleared up for a moment just to show them the north shore, bearing W. by N.: they tacked immediately, and at eight the wind shifted from N.N.W. to W.N.W. and blew with great violence. Their situation was now very alarming: the storm increased every minute, the weather was extremely thick, the rain seemed to threaten another deluge, they had a long dark night before them, they were in a narrow channel, and surrounded on every side by rocks and breakers. They attempted to clue up the mizen topsail, but before this service could be done, it was blown all to rags: they then brought to, with the main and fore topsail close reefed, and upon the cap, keeping the ship's head to the south-west; but there being a prodigious sea, it broke over them so often, that the whole deck was almost continually under water. At nine, by an accidental breaking of the fog, they saw the high cape on the north shore just mentioned, bearing east, at about a mile distance, but had entirely lost sight of the Tamar. At half an hour after three in the morning of the 27th, they suddenly perceived themselves close to a high land on the south shore, upon which they wore, and brought

to the northward. The gale still continued, if possible, with increasing violence, and the rain poured down in torrents, so that they were in a manner immersed in water, and expected every moment to be among the breakers. The long wished-for day at length broke, but the weather was still so thick that no land was to be seen, though they knew it could not be far distant, till after six, when they saw the south shore at about the distance of two miles, and soon after, to their great satisfaction, they saw the Tamar. About seven, both ships came to an anchor in the bay which lies to the eastward of Cape Monday, notwithstanding the sea that rolled in, for they were glad to get anchorage any where.

In the afternoon of the day following, the Tamar parted a new best bower cable, it being cut by the rock, and drove over to the east side of the bay, where she was brought up at a very little distance from some rocks, against which she must otherwise have been dashed to pieces.

At seven o'clock in the morning of the 29th, they weighed, and found their small bower cable very much rubbed by the foul ground, so that they were obliged to cut no less than six and twenty fathom of it off, and bend it again. In about half an hour, the Tamar, being very near the rocks, and not being able to purchase her anchor, made signals of distress. The commodore was therefore obliged to stand into the bay again, and having anchored, he sent hawsers on board the Tamar, and heaved her up, while she purchased her anchor, after which they heaved her to windward, and at noon, being got into a proper birth, she anchored again. They continued in their station all night, and the next morning a

gale came on at W.N.W. which was still more violent than any that had preceded it; the water was torn up all around them, and carried much higher than the masts' heads, a dreadful sea at the same time rolling in, so that, knowing the ground to be foul, they were in constant apprehension of parting their cables, in which case they must have been almost instantly dashed to atoms against the rocks that were just to leeward, and upon which the sea broke with inconceivable fury, and a noise not less loud than thunder. They lowered all the main and fore yards, let go the small bower, veered a cable and an half on the best bower, and having bent the sheet cable, stood by the anchor the rest of the day and till midnight, the sea often breaking half way up the main shrouds. About one in the morning (Sunday 31) the weather became somewhat more moderate, but continued to be very dark, rainy, and tempestuous, till midnight, when the wind shifted to the S.W. and soon afterwards it became comparatively calm and clear.

The next morning (April 1) they had a stark calm. with now and then some light airs from the eastward, but the weather was again thick, with hard rain, and they found a current setting strongly to the eastward. At four o'clock they got up the lower yards, unbent the sheet cable, and weighed the small bower: at eight they weighed the best bower, and found the cable very much rubbed in several places, which was considered as a great misfortune, it being a very fine new cable, which never had been wet before. At eleven they hove short on the stream anchor, but soon after, it being calm, and a thick fog coming on with hard rain, they veered away the stream cable, and with a warp to the Tamar, heaved the ship upon the bank again, and let go the small bower



in two and twenty fathom. At six in the evening they had strong gales at W.N.W. with violent squalls and much rain, and continued their station till the morning of the 3d, when the commodore sent the Tamar's boat, with an officer from each ship to the westward, in search of anchoring-places on the south shore; and at the same time he sent his own cutter with an officer to seek anchoring-places on the north shore.

The cutter returned the next morning at six o'clock, having been about five leagues to the westward upon the north shore, and found two anchoring-places. The officer reported, that having been on shore, he had fallen in with some Indians, who had with them a canoe of a construction very different from any that they had seen in the streight before; this vessel consisted of planks sewed together, but all the others were nothing more than the bark of large trees tied together at the ends, and kept open by short pieces of wood, which were thrust in transversely between the two sides, like the boats which children make of a bean-shell. The people, he said, were the nearest to brutes in their manner and appearance of any he had seen; they were, like some they had met with before, quite naked, notwithstanding the severity of the weather, except part of a seal skin which was thrown over their shoulders; and they eat their food, which was such that no other animal but a hog would touch, without any dressing: they had with them a large piece of whale blubber, which stunk intolerably, and one of them tore it in pieces with his teeth, and gave it about to the rest, who devoured it with the voracity of a wild beast. They did not, however, look upon what they saw in the possession of the English with indifference; for

while one of the crew was asleep, they cut off the hinder part of his jacket with a sharp flint, which they use as a knife.

About eight o'clock they made sail, and found little or no current. At six in the evening, they anchored in the bay on the southern shore, which lies about a league to the eastward of the cape, and had 15 fathom water. While lying here, and taking in wood and water, seven or eight Indians in a canoe came round the western point of the bay, and having landed opposite to the ship, made a fire. They invited them to come on board by all the signs they could devise, but without success; the commodore, therefore, took the jolly-boat, and went on shore to them. He introduced himself by making them presents of several trifles, with which they seemed to be much gratified, and they became very intimate in a few minutes; after they had spent some time together, the commodore sent away his people, in the boat, for some bread, and remained on shore with them alone. When the boat returned with the bread, he divided it among them, and he remarked with equal pleasure and surprize, that if a bit of biscuit happened to fall, not one of them offered to touch it till he gave his consent. In the mean time some of his people were cutting a little grass for two or three sheep which he had still left on board, and at length the Indians, perceiving what they were doing, ran immediately, and tearing up all the weeds they could get, carried them to the boat, which in a very short time was filled almost up to her gunwale. He was much gratified by this token of their good will, and he could perceive that they were pleased with the pleasure that he expressed upon the occasion; they had indeed taken such a fancy to them, that when

commodore Byron returned on board the boat, they all got into their canoe, and followed him. When his people came near their ship, however, they stopped, and gazed at her as if held in surprize by a mixture of astonishment and terror; but at last, though not without some difficulty, he prevailed upon four or five of them to venture on board. As soon as they entered the ship, he made them several presents, and in a very little time they appeared to be perfectly at ease. As he was very desirous to entertain them, one of the midshipmen played on the violin, and some of his people danced; at this they were so much delighted, and so impatient to show their gratitude, that one of them went over the ship's side into the canoe, and fetched up a seal-skin bag of red paint, and immediately smeared the fiddler's face all over with it: he was very desirous to pay the commodore the same compliment, which, however, he thought fit to decline; but the Indian made many vigorous efforts to get the better of his modesty, and it was not without some difficulty that he defended himself from receiving the honor he designed him in his own despatch. After having diverted and entertained them several hours, he intimated that it would be proper for them to go on shore; but their attachment was such, that it was by no means an easy matter to get them out of the ship. Their canoe was not of bark, but of planks sewed together.

At six o'clock in the morning of the 7th, they weighed with a moderate breeze at E.N.E. and fine weather. At seven they were abreast of Cape Upright, and at noon it bore E.S.E. distant four leagues; soon after, they tried the current, and found it set to the eastward, at the rate of a knot and an half an hour. At three it

fell calm, and the current driving them to the eastward very fast, they dropped an anchor, which before it took the ground was in one hundred and twenty fathom. This day the Tamar's boat returned from the westward; she had been within two or three leagues of Cape Pillar, and had found several very good anchoring-places on the south shore.

At one o'clock the next morning, having a fresh gale at west, they weighed, notwithstanding the weather was thick, and made sail; at eleven it blew very hard, with violent rain and a great sea, and as they perceived that they rather lost than gained ground, they stood in for a bay on the south shore, about four leagues to the westward of Cape Upright, and anchored in twenty fathom; the ground was not good, but in other respects this was one of the best harbours they had met with in the streight, for it was impossible that any wind should hurt them. There being less wind in the afternoon, and it inclining a little towards the south, they unmoored at two, and at four, the wind having come round to the S.S.E. and being a moderate breeze, they weighed and steered to the westward; they made about two leagues and an half, but night then coming on, they anchored, not without great difficulty, in a very good bay on the south shore in twenty fathom. As very violent gusts came from the land, they were very near being driven off before they could let go an anchor, and if they had not at last succeeded, they must have passed a dreadful night in the streight; for it blew an hurricane from the time they came to an anchor till the morning, with violent rain, which was sometimes intermingled with snow.

At six o'clock on the 9th, the wind being still fresh and squally at S.S.E. they weighed and steered W. by N. along the south shore. At eleven they were abreast of Cape Pillar, which by compass is about 14 leagues W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. from Cape Upright. Cape Pillar may be known by a large gap upon the top, and when it bears W.S.W. an island appears off it, which has an appearance somewhat like an hay-stack, and about which lie several rocks. The streight to the eastward of the cape is seven or eight leagues over; the land on each side is of a moderate height, but it is lowest on the north shore, the south shore being much the boldest, though both are craggy and broken. Westminster Island is nearer to the north than the south shore, and by the compass lies N.E. from Cape Pillar. The land on the north shore, near the west end of the streight, makes in many islands and rocks, upon which the sea breaks in a tremendous manner. The land about Cape Victory is distant from Cape Pillar about ten or eleven leagues, in the direction of N.W. by N. From the cape westward, the coast trends S.S.W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. to Cape Deseada, a low point, off which lie innumerable rocks and breakers. About four leagues W.S.W. from Cape Deseada lie some dangerous rocks, called by Sir John Narborough the Judges, upon which a mountainous surf always break with inconceivable fury. Four small islands, called the islands of Direction, are distant from Cape Pillar about eight leagues, in the direction of N.W. by W. When they were off this cape it was stark calm; but the commodore never saw such a swell as rolled in here, nor such a surge as broke on each shore. He expected every moment that the wind would spring up



from its usual quarter, and that the best which could happen to them would be to be driven many leagues up the streight again. Contrary, however, to all expectation, a fine steady gale sprung up at S. E. to which he spread all the sail that it was possible for the ship to bear, and ran off from this frightful and desolate coast at the rate of nine miles an hour; so that by eight o'clock in the evening they had left it twenty leagues behind them. And now to make the ship as stiff as possible, he knocked down their after-bulk head, and got two of the boats under the half deck; he also placed his twelve-oared cutter under the boom, so that they had nothing on the skids but the jolly-boat, and the alteration which this made in the vessel is inconceivable; for the weight of the boats upon the skids made her crank, and in a great sea they were also in danger of being lost.

Having cleared the streight, they pursued their course to the westward, till Friday, April 26, when they discovered the island of Masafuero, bearing W.N.W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. distant about sixteen leagues, but as to the northward it was hazy, the island of Don Juan Fernandez was not in sight. During this run the variation had gradually decreased from  $22^{\circ}$  to  $9^{\circ} 36'$  E.

They bore away for Masafuero, and at sunset, seing within about seven leagues of it, they brought to, and afterwards kept the wind all night. At day-break the next day they bore away again for the island, at the same time sending an officer, with a boat from each ship, to sound the eastern side of it. About noon the middle of the island bore W. distant about three miles, and as the commodore saw the boats run along the shore, without being able to land any where for the surf, he bore down to the north part of the island, off which a reef runs for

the distance of about two miles, to lay by for them. This island is very high, and the greater part of it is covered with wood; but towards the north end some spots seem to have been cleared, upon which numbers of goats were feeding, and they had a green and pleasant appearance. When the boats returned, the officer reported that he had found a bank on the side of the island nearest to the south point, at a considerable distance from the shore, where they might anchor, and opposite to which there was a fine fall of fresh water; but near the north point, he said, he could find no anchorage. The boats brought off a great quantity of very fine fish, which they had caught with hook and line near the shore; and as soon as they had taken them on board, which was late in the afternoon, they made sail, and worked to windward in the night.

At seven o'clock in the morning of the 28th, they anchored with the small bower, on the bank which the boats had discovered in twenty-four fathom, with black sandy ground. This part of the island lies north and south, and is about four miles long: the soundings are very regular, from twenty to fifteen fathom, within two cables' length of the shore. Soon after they were come to an anchor, the commodore sent out the boats to endeavour to get some wood and water, but as the shore was observed to be rocky, and a surf to break with great violence upon it, he ordered all the men to put on cork jackets, which had been sent with them to be made use of upon such occasions. By the help of these jackets, which not only assisted the men in swimming, but prevented their being bruised against the rocks, they got off a considerable quantity of water and wood, which, without such assistance, they could not have done:

there was, however, another species of danger here, against which cork jackets afforded no defence, for the sea abounded with sharks of an enormous size, which, when they saw a man in the water, would dart into the very surf to seize him; their people, however, happily escaped them, though they were many times very near: one of them, which was upwards of twenty feet long, came close to one of the boats that was watering, and having seized a large seal, instantly devoured it at one mouthful; and he himself saw another of nearly the same size, do the same thing under the ship's stern. Their people killed and sent off several of the goats, which they thought as good as the best venison in England; and it was observed that one of them appeared to have been caught and marked, its right ear being slit in a manner that could not have happened by accident. They had also fish in such plenty, that one boat would, with hooks and lines, catch in a few hours as much as would serve a large ship's company two days: they were of various sorts, all excellent in their kind, and many of them weighed from twenty to thirty pounds.

This evening, the surf running very high, the gunner and one of the seamen who were on shore with the waterers, were afraid to venture off, and the boat, therefore, when she came on board the last time, left them behind.

The next day they found a more convenient watering place, about a mile and a half to the northward of the ship, and about the middle way between the north and south points of the island, there being at this place less surf than where the boats first went on shore. The tide here set twelve hours to the northward and twelve to the southward, which they found very convenient, for

as the wind was southerly, with a great swell, the boats could not otherwise have got on board with their water. They got off ten tons of water from the new watering-place this day, and in the afternoon the commodore sent a boat to fetch off the gunner and seaman, who had been left on shore at the old watering-place the night before: but the surf was still so great, that the seaman, who could not swim, was afraid to venture; he was therefore again left behind, and the gunner staid with him. As soon as this was reported to the commodore, he sent another boat to inform them, that as, by the appearance of the weather, there was reason to believe it would soon blow hard, he was afraid he might be driven off the bank in the night, the consequence of which would be that they must be left behind upon the island. When the boat came to the surf, the people on board delivered his message, upon which the gunner swam through the surf, and got on board her; but the seaman, though he had a cork jacket on, said he was sure he should be drowned if he attempted to get off to the boat, and that, chusing rather to die a natural death, he was determined at all events to remain upon the island; he then took an affectionate leave of the people, wishing them all happiness, and the people on board returned his good wishes. One of the midshipmen, however, just as the boat was about to return, took the end of a rope in his hand, jumped into the sea, and swam through the surf to the beach, where poor John still continued, ruminating on his situation, in a dejected attitude, and with a most disconsolate length of countenance. The midshipman began to expostulate with him upon the strange resolution he had taken, and in the mean time having made a running knot in his rope, dexterously contrived to throw

it round his body, calling out to his companions in the boat, who had hold of the other end of it, to haul away: they instantly took the hint, and the poor seceder was very soon dragged through the surf into the boat; he had, however, swallowed so great a quantity of water, that he was to all appearance dead, but being held up by the heels, he soon recovered his speech and motion, and was perfectly well the next day. In the evening the commodore removed captain Mouat from the Tamar, and appointed him captain of the Dolphin under him; Mr. Cumming, his first lieutenant, he appointed captain of the Tamar, taking Mr. Carteret, her first lieutenant, on board in his room, and gave Mr. Kendal, one of the mates of the Dolphin, a commission as second lieutenant of the Tamar.

At seven o'clock in the morning of the 30th, they weighed and steered to the northward, along the east side of the island, but could find no anchoring-place; they bore away, therefore, with a fresh gale at S.E. and hazy weather, and at noon the middle of the island was distant eight leagues, in the direction of S.S.E. He continued to steer N. 3° W. the next day, and at noon on the 2d of May, he changed his course, and steered W. intending, if possible, to make the land, which is called Davis's Land in the charts, and is laid down in latitude 27° 30' S. and about five hundred leagues west of Copiapo in Chili; but on the 9th, finding little prospect of getting to the westward, in the latitude which he at first proposed; being then in lat. 26° 46' S. long. 94° 45' W. and having a great run to make, he determined to steer a north-west course till he got the true trade wind, and then to stand to the westward till he



should fall in with Solomon's Islands, if any such there were, or make some new discovery.

On the 10th, they saw several dolphins and bonnettas about the ship, and the next day some straggling birds, which were brown on the back and the upper part of their wings, and white on the rest of the body, with a short beak, and a short pointed tail. The variation was now decreased to  $4^{\circ} 45'$  E their latitude was  $24^{\circ} 30'$  S. their long.  $97^{\circ} 45'$  W.

On the 14th, they saw several grampuses, and more of the birds which have just been mentioned, so that imagining they might be near some land, they kept a good look-out, but saw nothing.

On the morning of the 16th, they saw two very remarkable birds; they flew very high, were as large as geese, and all over as white as snow, except their legs, which were black; the commodore now began to imagine that he had passed some land or islands, which lay to the southward, for the last night they observed that, although they had generally a great swell from that quarter, the water became quite smooth for a few hours, after which the swell returned.

On Wednesday 22, being in lat.  $20^{\circ} 52'$  S. long.  $115^{\circ} 38'$  W. with a faint breeze at E.S.E. they had so great a swell from the southward, that they were in perpetual danger of their masts rolling over the ship's side, so that he was obliged to haul more to the northward, as well to ease the ship, as in hopes of getting the true trade-wind, which they had not yet; and now some of the best men began to complain of the scurvy. This day, for the first time, they caught two bonnettas; they also saw several tropic birds about the ship, and

observed that they were larger than any they had seen before; their whole plumage was white, and they had two long feathers in the tail. The variation now had changed in its direction, and was  $19^{\circ}$  W.

On the 26th, they saw two large birds about the ship, which were all black, except the neck and the beak, which were white; they had long wings and long feathers in their tail, yet they observed that they flew heavily, and therefore imagined that they were of a species which did not usually fly far from the shore. The commodore had flattered himself, that before he had run six degrees to the westward of Masafuero, they should have found a settled trade-wind to the S.E. but the wind still continued to the north, though they had a mountainous swell from the S.W. Their latitude was now  $16^{\circ} 55'$  S. long.  $127^{\circ} 55'$  W. and here the needle at this time had no variation.

On Tuesday 28, they saw two fine large birds about the ship, one of which was brown and white, and the other black and white; they wanted much to settle upon the yards, but the working of the ship frightened them.

On the 31st, the wind shifted from N. by W. to N.W. by W. and the number of birds that were now about the ship was very great; from these circumstances, and their having lost the great south-west swell, they imagined some land to be near, and they looked out for it with great diligence, for their people began now to fall down with the scurvy very fast.

They saw no land, however, till one o'clock in the morning of Friday the 7th of June, when they were in lat.  $14^{\circ} 5'$  S. long.  $144^{\circ} 58'$  W. and observed the variation to be  $4^{\circ} 30'$  E. After making the land, they hauled upon a wind under an easy sail till the morning, and then a low small island bore from them W.S.W.

at the distance of about two leagues. In a very short time they saw another island to windward of them bearing E.S.E. distant between three and four leagues: this appeared to be much larger than that which they first discovered, and they must have passed very near it in the night. They stood for the small island, which as they drew near it had a most beautiful appearance; it was surrounded by a beach of the finest white sand, and within it was covered with tall trees, which extended their shade to a great distance, and formed the most delightful groves that can be imagined, without under-wood. They judged this island to be about five miles in circumference, and from each end of it they saw a spit running out into the sea, upon which the surge broke with great fury; there was also a great surf all round it. They soon perceived that it was inhabited, for many of the natives appeared upon the beach with spears in their hands, which were at least sixteen feet long. They presently made several large fires, which they supposed to be a signal; for they immediately perceived several fires upon the larger island that was to windward of them, by which they knew that also to be inhabited. The commodore sent the boat, with an officer, to look for an anchoring-place, who, to their great regret and disappointment, returned with an account that he had been all round the island, and that no bottom could be found within less than a cable's length of the shore, which was surrounded close to the beach with a steep coral rock. The scurvy by this time had made dreadful havoc among them, many of their best men being now confined to their hammocks; the poor wretches who were able to crawl upon the deck, stood gazing at this little paradise, which nature had forbid-

den them to enter, with sensations which cannot easily be conceived; they saw cocoa-nuts in great abundance, the milk of which is perhaps the most powerful antiscorbutic in the world: they had reason to suppose that there were limes, bananas, and other fruits which are generally found between the tropics; and to increase their mortification, they saw the shells of many turtle scattered about the shore. These refreshments, indeed, for want of which they were languishing to death, were as effectually beyond their reach, as if there had been half the circumference of the world between them; yet their being in sight, was no inconsiderable increase of the distress which they suffered by the want of them. When the commodore knew the soundings, he could not forbear standing close round the island with the ship, though he also knew it was impossible to procure any of the refreshments which it produced. The natives ran along the shore abreast of the ship, shouting and dancing; they also frequently brandished their long spears, and then threw themselves backward, and lay a few minutes motionless, as if they had been dead; this they understood as a menace that they would kill them, if they ventured to go on shore. As they were sailing along the coast, they took notice, that in one place the natives had fixed upright in the sand two spears, to the top of which they had fastened several things that fluttered in the air, and that some of them were every moment kneeling down before them, as they supposed, invoking the assistance of some invisible being to defend them against them. Whilst the commodore was thus circumnavigating the island with the ship, he sent the boats out again to sound, and when they came near the shore, the Indians set up one of the most hideous

yells ever heard, pointing at the same time to their spears, and poising in their hands large stones which they took up from the beach. Their men, on the contrary, made all the signs of amity and good will that they could devise; and at the same time threw them bread and many other things, none of which they vouchsafed so much as to touch, but with great expedition hauled five or six large canoes, which they saw lying upon the beach, up into the wood. When this was done, the Indians waded into the water, and seemed to watch for an opportunity of laying hold of the boat, that they might drag her on shore: the people on board her apprehending that this was their design, and if they got them on shore they would certainly put them to death, were very impatient to be beforehand with them, and would fain have fired upon them; but the officer on board having no permission to commit any hostilities, restrained them. They were of a deep copper colour, exceedingly stout and well limbed, and remarkably nimble and active. This island lies in lat.  $14^{\circ} 5'$  S. long.  $155^{\circ} 4'$  W. As the boats reported a second time that there was no anchoring-ground about this island, the commodore determined to work up to the other, which was accordingly done all the rest of the day, and the following night.

At six o'clock in the morning of Sunday the 8th, they brought to on the west side of it, at the distance of about three quarters of a mile from the shore, but they had no soundings with 140 fathom of line. They now perceived several other low islands, or rather peninsulas, most of them being joined one to the other by a neck of land, very narrow, and almost level with the surface of the water, which breaks high over it. In ap-



proaching these islands, the cocoa-nut trees are first discovered, as they are higher than any part of the surface. Commodore Byron sent a boat, with an officer, from each ship, to sound the lee side of these islands for an anchoring-place; and as soon as they left the ship, he saw the Indians run down to the beach in great numbers, armed with long spears and clubs; they kept abreast of the boats as they went sounding along the shore, and used many threatening gestures to prevent their landing; he therefore fired a nine-pound shot from the ship over their heads, upon which they ran into the woods with great precipitation. At ten o'clock the boats returned, but could get no soundings close in with the surf, which broke very high upon the shore. At half an hour after ten they bore away, and made sail to the westward, finding it impossible to procure at these islands any refreshment for their sick, whose situation was becoming more deplorable every hour; they were therefore called the Islands of Disappointment. They lie in lat.  $14^{\circ} 10'$  S. long.  $141^{\circ} 52'$  W.

---

---

---

*CHAP. II.*

---

---

The Discovery of King George's Islands, and several others.—  
Arrival at Tinian.—Transactions at Batavia.—Return to England.

---

ON the 9th, at half an hour after five o'clock in the afternoon, they saw land again bearing W.S.W. at the distance of six or seven leagues, and at seven they brought to for the night. In the morning, being within three miles of the shore, they discovered it to be a long low island, with a white beach, of a pleasant appearance, full of cocoa-nut and other trees, and surrounded with a rock of red coral. They stood along the north-east side of it, within half a mile of the shore; and the savages, as soon as they saw them, made great fires, as they supposed, to alarm the distant inhabitants of the island, and ran along the beach abreast of the ship, in great numbers, armed in the same manner as the natives of the Islands of Disappointment. Over the land on this side of the island, they could see a large lake of salt water, or lagoon, which appeared to be two or three leagues wide, and to reach within a small distance of the opposite shore. Into this lagoon they saw a small inlet about a league from the south-west point, off which they brought to. At this place the natives have built a little town, under the shade of a fine grove of cocoa-

nut trees. The commodore immediately sent off the boats, with an officer in each, to sound; but they could find no anchorage, the shore being every where as steep as a wall, except at the very mouth of the inlet, which was scarcely a ship's length wide, and there they had thirteen fathom, with a bottom of coral rock. They stood close in with the ships, and saw hundreds of the savages, ranged in very good order, and standing up to their waists in water: the natives were all armed in the same manner as those that they had seen at the other islands, and one of them carried a mat fastened to the top of a pole, which they imagined was an ensign. They made a most hideous and incessant noise, and in a short time many large canoes came down the lake to join them. Their boats were still out, and the people on board them made all the signs of friendship that they could invent, upon which some of the canoes came through the inlet, and drew near them. They now began to hope that a friendly intercourse might be established, but they soon discovered that the Indians had no other design than to haul the boats on shore: many of them leaped off the rocks, and swam to them, and one of them got into that which belonged to the Tamar, and in the twinkling of an eye seized a seaman's jacket, and jumping overboard with it, never once appeared above water till he was close in shore among his companions. Another of them got hold of a midshipman's hat; not knowing how to take it off, he pulled it downward instead of lifting it up, so that the owner had time to prevent its being taken away, otherwise it would probably have disappeared as suddenly as the jacket; the men bore all this with much patience, and the Indians seemed to triumph in their impunity.

About noon, finding there was no anchorage here, they bore away, and steered along the shore to the westernmost point of the island: the boats immediately followed, and kept sounding close to the beach, but could get no ground.

When they came to the westernmost point of this island, they saw another bearing S.W. by W. about four leagues distant. They were at this time about a league beyond the inlet where they had left the natives, and who were not satisfied with having got rid of them quietly, for they now perceived two large double canoes sailing after the ship, with about 30 men in each, all armed after the manner of their country. The boats were a good way to leeward of them, and the canoes passing between the ship and the shore, seemed very eagerly to give them chase. Upon this the commodore made the signal for the boats to speak with the canoes, and as soon as they perceived it, they turned, and made towards the Indians, who seeing this, were seized with a sudden panic, and immediately hauling down their sails, paddled back again at a surprising rate. Their boats, however, came up with them, but notwithstanding the dreadful surf that broke upon the shore, the canoes pushed through it, and the Indians immediately hauled them up upon the beach. Their boats followed them, and the Indians, dreading an invasion of their coast, prepared to defend it with clubs and stones, upon which the sailors fired, and killed two or three of them; one of them received three balls which went quite through his body, yet he afterwards took up a large stone, and died in the action of throwing it against his enemy. This man fell close to their boats, so that the Indians who remained unhurt did not dare to attempt the carrying

off his body, which gave them an opportunity to examine it; but they carried off the rest of their dead, and made the best of their way back to their companions at the inlets. The boats then returned, and brought off the two canoes which they had pursued. One of them was thirty-two feet long, and the other somewhat less, but they were both of a very curious construction, and must have caused those who made them infinite labour. They consisted of planks exceedingly well wrought, and in many places adorned with carving: these planks were sewed together, and over every seam there was a stripe of tortoise-shell, very artificially fastened, to keep out the weather: their bottoms were as sharp as a wedge, and they were very narrow, and therefore two of them were joined literally together by a couple of strong spars, so that there was a space of about six or eight feet between them: a mast was hoisted in each of them, and the sail was spread between the masts; the sail was made of matting, and a neat piece of work; their paddles were very curious, and their cordage was as good and as well laid as any in England, though it appeared to be made of the outer covering of the cocoa-nut. When these vessels sail, several men sit upon the spars which hold the canoes together.

As the surf, which broke very high upon the shore, rendered it impossible to procure refreshments for the sick in this part of the island, they hauled the wind, and worked back to the inlet, being determined to try once more what could be done there.

Having recovered that station in the afternoon, the commodore immediately sent the boats to sound the inlet again, but they confirmed the account which had been made before, that it afforded no anchorage for a ship.



While the boats were absent, he observed a great number of the natives upon the point, near the spot where they had left them in the morning, and they seemed to be very busy in loading a great number of large canoes which lay close to the beach. As he thought they might be troublesome, and was unwilling that they should suffer by another unequal contest with their people, he fired a shot over their heads, which produced the intended effect, for they all disappeared in a moment.

Just before the evening closed in, their boats landed, and got a few cocoa-nuts, which they brought off, but saw none of the inhabitants. In the night, during which they had rain and hard squalls, they stood off and on with the ships, and at seven o'clock in the morning brought to off the inlet. Boats were immediately sent on the shore in search of refreshments, and all the men who were not so ill of the scurvy as to be laid up, went in them; the commodore also went on shore himself, and continued there the whole day. They saw many houses or wigwams of the natives, but they were totally deserted, except by the dogs, who kept an incessant howling from the time the boats came on shore, till they returned to the ship; they were low mean hovels, thatched with cocoa-nut branches; but they were most delightfully situated in a fine grove of stately trees, many of which were the cocoa-nut, and many such as they were totally unacquainted with. The cocoa-nut trees seem to furnish them with almost all the necessities of life; particularly food, sails, cordage, timber, and vessels to hold water; so that probably these people always fix their habitations where the trees abound. The shore was covered with coral, and the shells of very

large pearl oysters. They saw but little of the people, except at a distance; they could, however, perceive that the women had a piece of cloth of some kind, probably fabricated of the same stuff as their sail, hanging from their waist as low as the knee; the men were naked. In rummaging some of the huts, they found the carved head of a rudder, which had manifestly belonged to a Dutch long-boat, and was very old and worm-eaten. They found also a piece of hammered iron, a piece of brass, and some iron tools, which the ancestors of the present inhabitants of this place probably obtained from the Dutch ship to which the long-boat had belonged. Whether these people found means to cut off the ship, or whether she was lost upon the island, or after she left it, cannot be known; but there is reason to believe that she never returned to Europe, because no account of her voyage, or of any discoveries that she made, is extant.

Close to the houses of these people, they saw buildings of another kind, which appeared to be burying places, and from which they judged that they had great veneration for their dead. They were situated under lofty trees, that gave a thick shade; the sides and tops were of stone: and in their figure they somewhat resembled the square tombs, with a flat top, which are always to be found in our country church-yards. Near these buildings they found many neat boxes full of human bones, and upon the branches of the trees which shaded them hung a great number of the heads and bones of turtle, and a variety of fish, inclosed in a kind of basket-work of reeds: some of the fish they took down, and found that nothing remained but the skin and the teeth, the bones and entrails seemed to have

been extracted, and the muscular flesh dried away. They sent off several boat-loads of cocoa-nuts, and a great quantity of scurvy grass, with which the island is covered, refreshments which were of infinite service to the men, as by this time there was scarcely one wholly untouched by the scurvy.

The fresh water here is very good, but it is scarce: the wells which supply the natives are so small, that when two or three cocoa-nut shells have been filled from them, they are dry for a few minutes; but as they presently fill again, if a little pains were taken to enlarge them, they would abundantly supply any ship with water.

They saw no venomous creature here, but the flies were an intolerable torment; they covered them from head to foot, and filled not only the boat, but the ships. They saw great numbers of parrots and paroquets, and several other birds, which were altogether unknown to them; also, a beautiful kind of dove, so tame that some of them frequently came close to them, and even followed them into the Indian huts. All this day the natives kept themselves closely concealed, and did not even make a smoke upon any part of the island as far as they could see; probably fearing that a smoke might discover the place of their retreat. In the evening they all returned on board the ship.

The next morning, Wednesday 12, at six o'clock, the commodore made sail for the island he intended to visit, and having reached it, he steered S.W. by W. close along the north-east side of it, but could get no soundings: this side is about six or seven leagues long, and the whole makes much the same appearance as the other, having a large salt water lake in the middle of it.

As soon as the ship came in sight, the natives ran down to the beach in great numbers : they were armed in the same manner as those that they had seen upon the other island, and kept abreast of the ship for several leagues. As the heat of this climate is very great, they seemed to suffer much by running so far in the sun, for they sometimes plunged into the sea, and sometimes fell flat upon the sand, that the surf might break over them, after which they renewed the race with great vigour. The boats were at this time sounding along the shore, as usual, but the commodore had given strict orders to the officers who commanded them never to molest the natives, except it should become absolutely necessary for their own defence, but to try all possible means to obtain their confidence and good will; the men therefore went as near to the shore as they durst for the surf, and made signs that they wanted water; the Indians readily understood them, and directed them to run down further along the shore, which they did, till they came abreast of such a cluster of houses, as they had just left upon the other island : to this place the Indians still followed them, and were there joined by many others; the boats immediately hauled close into the surf, and they brought to, with the ships, at a little distance from the shore, upon which a stout old man, with a long white beard, that gave him a venerable appearance, came down from the houses to the beach. He was attended by a young man, and appeared to have the authority of a chief or king: the rest of the Indians, at a signal which he made, retired to a little distance, and he then advanced quite to the water's edge: in one hand he held the green branch of a tree, and in the other he grasped his beard, which he pressed to his bosom;

in this attitude he made a long oration, or rather song, for it had a musical cadence which was by no means disagreeable. They regretted infinitely that they could not understand what he said to them, and not less that he could not understand any thing which they should say to him; to shew their good will, however, they threw him some trifling presents, while he was yet speaking, but he would neither touch them himself, nor suffer them to be touched by others till he had done: he then walked into the water, and threw them the green branch, after which he took up the things which had been thrown from the boats.

Every thing now having a friendly appearance, they made signs that they should lay down their arms, and most of them having complied, one of the midshipmen, encouraged by this testimony of confidence and friendship, leaped out of the boat with his clothes on, and swam through the surf to shore. The Indians immediately gathered round him, and began to examine his clothes with great curiosity; they seemed particularly to admire his waistcoat, and being willing to gratify his new friends, he took it off, and presented it to them: this courtesy, however, produced a disagreeable effect, for he had no sooner given away his waistcoat, than one of the Indians very ingeniously untied his cravat, and the next moment snatched it from his neck, and ran away with it. The man, therefore, to prevent his being stripped by piece-meal, made the best of his way back again to the boat; still, however, they were upon good terms, and several of the Indians swam off to them, some bringing a cocoa-nut, and others a little fresh water in a cocoa-nut shell. But the principal object was to obtain some pearls; and the men, to assist them in explaining their meaning, had taken with them some of



the pearl oyster-shells which they had found in great numbers upon the coast; but all their endeavours were ineffectual, for they could not, even with this assistance, at all make themselves understood. They observed, that in the lake, or lagoon, there were two or three very large vessels, one of which had two masts, and some cordage aloft to support them.

To these two islands the commodore gave the name of King George's Islands, in honour of his majesty. That which they last visited lies in latitude  $14^{\circ} 41'$  S. longitude  $149^{\circ} 15'$  W. the variation of the compass here was  $5^{\circ}$  E.

They pursued their course to the westward the same day, and the next, about three o'clock in the afternoon, saw land again, bearing S.S.W. distant about six leagues. They immediately stood for it, and found it to be a very low and very narrow island, lying east and west; they ran along the south side of it, which had a green and pleasant appearance, but a dreadful surf breaks upon every part of it, with foul ground at some distance, and many rocks and small islands scattered about three leagues from the shore. They found it about twenty leagues in length, and it appeared to abound with inhabitants, though they could only get a transient glance of them as they passed along. To this place the commodore gave the name of the Prince of Wales's Island. It lies in lat.  $15^{\circ}$  S. and the westernmost end of its longitude  $151^{\circ} 53'$  W. - It is distant from King George's Islands eight and forty leagues.

From the western extremity of this island they steered N.  $82^{\circ}$  W. and at noon on the 16th were in lat.  $14^{\circ} 28'$  S. long.  $156^{\circ} 23'$  W. the variation being  $7^{\circ} 40'$  E. The wind was now easterly, and they had again the

same mountainous swell from the southward that they had before they made the islands of Direction, and which, from that time to this day, they had lost; when they lost that swell, and for some days before, they saw vast flocks of birds, which they observed always took their flight to the southward when evening was coming on. These appearances were proof that there was land in the same direction, and if the wind had not failed them in the higher latitudes, they should have fallen in with it.

The next day they again saw many birds of various sorts about the ship, and therefore supposed that some other island was not far distant, for the swell continuing, they concluded that the land was not of very great extent; they proceeded, however, with caution, for the islands in this part of the ocean render the navigation very dangerous, they being so low, that a ship may be close in with them before they are seen. They saw nothing, however, the three following days, during which they continued to steer the same course, though the birds still continued about the vessel in great numbers. About seven o'clock in the morning of the 21st, they discovered a most dangerous reef of breakers, bearing S.S.W. and not farther distant than a single league. In about half an hour afterwards land was seen from the mast-head, bearing W.N.W. and distant about eight leagues: it had the appearance of three islands, with rocks and broken ground between them. The south-east side of these islands lies N.E. by N. and S.W. by S. and is about three leagues in length between the extreme points, from both which a reef runs out, upon which the sea breaks to a tremendous height. They sailed round the north end, and upon the north-west

and west side, saw innumerable rocks and shoals, which stretched near two leagues into the sea, and were extremely dangerous. The islands themselves had a more fertile and beautiful appearance than any they had seen before, and, like the rest, swarmed with people, whose habitations they saw standing in clusters all along the coast. They saw also a large vessel under sail, at a little distance from the shore; but to their unspeakable regret, they were obliged to leave the place without further examination, for it was surrounded in every direction by rocks and breakers, which rendered the hazard more than equivalent to every advantage they might procure. These the commodore called the Islands of Danger, and steered from them N.W. by W.

After having seen the breakers soon after it was light in the morning, he told his officers that he apprehended they should have frequent alarms in the night; at night, therefore, every body was upon the watch, which a very hard squall of wind, with rain, rendered the more necessary. About nine o'clock, having gone down into his cabin, he heard a great noise above, and when he inquired what was the matter, he was told that the Tamar, who was ahead, had fired a gun, and that their people saw breakers to leeward; he ran instantly upon the deck, and soon perceived, that what had been taken for breakers was nothing more than an undulating reflection of the moon, which was going down, and shone faintly from behind a cloud in the horizon; they therefore bore away after the Tamar, but did not get sight of her till an hour afterwards.

On the 24th, about ten o'clock in the morning, they discovered another island, bearing S.S.W. distant about

seven or eight leagues, they steered for it, and found it to be low, but covered with wood, among which were cocoa-nut trees in great abundance. It had a pleasant appearance, and a large lake in the middle, like King George's Island: it is near thirty miles in circumference, a dreadful sea breaks upon almost every part of the coast, and a great deal of foul ground lies about it. They sailed quite round it, and when they were on the lee side, sent out boats to sound, in hopes of finding anchorage; no soundings, however, were to be got near the shore: however the boats were sent a second time, with orders to land, if it were possible, and procure some refreshments for the sick: they landed with great difficulty, and brought off about two hundred cocoa-nuts, which to persons in their circumstances were an inestimable treasure. The people who were on shore reported, that there were no signs of its having ever been inhabited, but that they found thousands of sea-fowl sitting upon their nests, which was built in high trees: these birds were so tame, that they suffered themselves to be knocked down without leaving their nests: the ground was covered with land crabs, but they saw no other animal. The commodore called this the Duke of York's Island, in honor of his Royal Highness, and believed that they were the first human beings who ever saw it.

They continued their course till the 29th, in the track of the islands they were seeking, but having no success, they afterwards shaped their course for the Ladrone Islands, which, through a long run, they hoped to accomplish before they should be distressed for water, notwithstanding it now began to fall short.

On Tuesday the 2d of July, they again saw many birds about the ship, and at four o'clock in the afternoon discovered an island bearing north, and distant about six leagues: they stood for it till sun set, when it was distant about four leagues, and then kept off and on for the night. The next morning they found it a low flat island, of a most delightful appearance, and full of wood, among which the cocoa-nut tree was very conspicuous: they saw, however, to their great regret, much foul ground about it, upon which the sea broke with a dreadful surf. They steered along the south-west side of it, which they judged to be about four leagues in length, and soon perceived not only that it was inhabited, but very populous; for presently after the ship came in sight, they saw at least a thousand of the natives assembled upon the beach, and in a very short time more than sixty canoes, or rather proas, put off from the shore, and made towards them. They lay by to receive them, and they were very soon ranged in a circle round them. These vessels were very neatly made, and so clean that they appeared to be quite new; none of them had fewer than three persons on board, nor any of them more than six. After these Indians had gazed at them some time, one of them suddenly jumped out of his proa, swam to the ship, and ran up the side like a cat; as soon as he had stepped over the gunwhale, he sat down upon it, and burst into a violent fit of laughter, then started up, and ran all over the ship, attempting to steal whatever he could lay his hands upon, but without success, for being stark naked, it was impossible to conceal his booty for a moment. The seamen put on him a jacket and trowsers, which produced great merriment, for he had all the gestures of a monkey newly dressed; they also



gave him bread, which he eat with a voracious appetite, and after having played a thousand antic tricks, he leaped overboard, jacket, trowsers and all, and swam back again to his proa ; after this several others swam to the ship, ran up the side of the gun-room ports, and having crept in, snatched up whatever lay in their reach, and immediately leaped again into the sea, and swam away at a great rate, though some of them, having both hands full, held up their arms quite out of the water, to prevent their plunder from being spoiled. These people are tall, well proportioned, and clean limbed ; their skin is a bright copper colour, their features are extremely good, and there is a mixture of intrepidity and cheerfulness in their countenances that is very striking. They have long black hair, which some of them wore tied up behind in a great bunch, others in three knots ; some of them had long beards, some only whiskers, and some nothing more than a small tuft at the point of the chin. They were all of them stark naked, except their ornaments, which consisted of shells, very prettily disposed and strung together, and were worn round their necks, wrists, and waists ; all their ears were bored, but they had no ornaments in them ; probably when they wear any they are very heavy, for their ears hung down almost to their shoulders, and some of them were quite split through. One of these men, who appeared to be a person of some consequence, had a string of human teeth about his waist, which was probably a trophy of his military prowess, for he would not part with it in exchange for any thing that was offered him. Some of them were unarmed, but others had one of the most dangerous weapons ever seen ; it was a kind of spear very broad at the end, and stuck full of shark's teeth,

which are as sharp as a lancet, at the sides, for about three feet of its length. The commodore sent out the boats to sound soon after ; they brought to off the island, and when they came back, they reported that there was ground at the depth of thirty fathom, within two cable's length of the shore ; but as the bottom was coral rock, and the soundings much too near the breakers for a ship to lie in safety, he was obliged again to make sail without procuring any refreshments for the sick. This island, to which the officers gave the name of Byron's Island, lies in latitude  $1^{\circ} 8' S.$  longitude  $173^{\circ} 46' E.$  the variation of the compass here was one point E.

On the 21st, all their cocoa-nuts being expended the men began to fall down with the scurvy. The effects of these nuts alone, in checking this disease, is astonishing ; many whose limbs were become as black as ink, who could not move without the assistance of two men, and who, besides total debility, suffered excruciating pain, were in a few days, by eating these nuts, although at sea, so far recovered as to do their duty, and could even go aloft as well as they did before the distemper seized them. For several days about this time they had only faint breezes, with smooth water, so that they made but little way, and as they were now far from the Ladrone Islands, where they hoped some refreshments might be procured, they most ardently wished for a fresh gale, especially as the heat was still intolerable, the glass for a long time having never been lower than eighty one, but often up to eighty four, this having been the most dangerous run that ever was made.

On the 18th, they had a northerly current, and being now nearly in the latitude of Tinian, shaped their course for that island.

On the 28th, they saw a great number of birds about the ship, which continued till the 30th, when about two o'clock in the afternoon they saw land, bearing W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. which proved to be the islands Saypan, Tinian, and Aiguigan. At sun-set, the extremes of them bore from N. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. westward to S. W; and the three islands had the appearance of one. At seven, they hauled the wind, and stood off and on all night; and at six the next morning, the extremes of the islands, which still made in one, bore from N. W. by N. to S. W. distant five leagues. The east side of these islands lies N. E. by N. and S. W. by S. Saypan is the northermost; and from the north-east point of that island to the south west point of Aiguigan, the distance is about seventeen leagues. These three islands are between two and three leagues distant from each other; Saypan is the largest and Aiguigan, which is high and round, the smallest. They steered along the east side of them, and at noon hauled round the south point of Tinian, between that island and Aiguigan, and anchored at the south-west end of it, in sixteen fathom water, with a bottom of hard sand and coral rock, opposite to a white sandy bay, about a mile and a quarter from the shore, and about three quarters of a mile from a reef of rocks that lies at a good distance from the shore, in the very spot where lord Anson lay in the Centurion. The water at this place is so very clear that the bottom is plainly to be seen at the depth of four and twenty fathom, which is no less than 144 feet.

As soon as the ship was secured, the commodore went on shore to fix upon a place where tents might be erected for the sick, which were now very numerous; not a single man being wholly free from the scurvy, and

many in the last stage of it. They found several huts which had been left by the Spaniards and Indians the year before. After he had fixed upon a spot for the tents, six or seven of them endeavoured to push through the woods that they might come at the beautiful lawns and meadows which lord Anson mentions, and if possible kill some cattle. The trees stood so thick, and the place was so overgrown with underwood, that they could not see three yards before them; they therefore were obliged to keep continually hallooing to each other, to prevent their being separately lost in this trackless wilderness. As the weather was intolerably hot, they had nothing on besides their shoes, except their shirts and trowsers, and these were in a very short time torn all to rags by the bushes and brambles; at last, however, with incredible difficulty and labour, they got through; but to their surprise and disappointment, they found the country very different from the account given of it; the lands were entirely overgrown with a stubborn kind of reed or brush, in many places higher than their heads, and no where lower than their middles, which continually entangled their legs, and cut them like whipcord; their stockings perhaps might have suffered still more, but they wore none. During this march they were also covered with flies from head to foot, and whenever they offered to speak were sure of having a mouthful, many of which never failed to get down their throats. After they had walked about three or four miles, they got sight of a bull, which they killed, and a little before night got back to the beach, as wet as if they had been dipt in water, and so fatigued that they were scarcely able to stand. They immediately sent out a party to fetch the bull, and found, that during their

excursion some tents had been got up, and the sick brought on shore.

The next day the men were employed in setting up more tents, getting the water-casks on shore, and clearing the well at which they were to be filled. This well was the worst that they had met with during the voyage for the water was not only brackisk, but full of worms. The road also, where the ships lay, was a dangerous situation at this season, for the bottom is hard sand and large coral rocks, and the anchor having no hold in the sand, the cable was in perpetual danger of being cut to pieces by the coral ; to prevent which, as much as possible, they rounded the cables and buoyed them up with empty water casks. Another precaution also was learned by experience, for at first they moored, but finding the cables much damaged, resolved to lie single for the future, that by veering away or heaving in, as they should have more or less wind, they might always keep them from being slack, and consequently from rubbing, and this expedient succeeded to their wish. At the full and change of the moon, a prodigious swell tumbles in here, so that the ships at anchor roll ; and it once drove in from the westward with such violence, and broke so high upon the reef, that the commodore was obliged to put to sea for a week ; for if their cable had parted in the night, and the wind had been upon the shore, which sometimes happens for two or three days together, the ship must inevitably have been lost upon the rocks.

As the commodore was very ill with the scurvy, he ordered a tent to be pitched for him, and took up his residence on shore : where they also erected the armourers's forge, and began to repair the iron-work of both



the ships. They soon found that the island produced limes, sour oranges, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, guavas, and paupaus, in great abundance ; but they found no water-melons, scurvy-grass, or sorrel. Of the bread-fruit we shall give a particular description in another voyage.

Notwithstanding the fatigue and distress that they had endured, and the various climates they had passed through, neither of the ships had yet lost a single man since their sailing from England ; but while they lay here two died of fevers, a disease with which many were seized, though they all recovered very fast from the scurvy. The rains were violent, and almost incessant, and the heat was so great as to threaten them with suffocation. The thermometer, which was kept on board the ship, generally stood at eighty-six, which is but nine degrees less than the heat of the blood at the heart ; and if it had been on shore it would have risen much higher. Besides the inconvenience which they suffered from the weather, they were incessantly tormented by the flies in the day, and by the musquitoes in the night. The island also swarms with centipedes and scorpions, and a large black ant, scarcely inferior to either in the malignity of its bite. Besides these, there were venomous insects without number, altogether unknown to them by which many suffered so severely, that they were afraid to lie down in their beds ; nor were those on board in a much better situation than those on shore, for great numbers of creatures being carried into the ship with the wood, they took possession of every birth, and left the poor seamen no place of rest either below or upon the deck.

As soon as they were settled in their new habitations, the commodore sent out parties to discover the haunts

of the cattle, some of which were found, but at a great distance from the tents, and the beasts were so shy that it was very difficult to get a shot at them. Some of the parties which, when their haunts had been discovered, were sent out to kill them, were absent three days and nights before they could succeed; and when a bullock had been dragged seven or eight miles to the tents, it was generally full of fly-blows, and stunk so as to be unfit for use; nor was this the worst, for the fatigue of the men in bringing down the carcase, and the intolerable heat they suffered from the climate and the labour, frequently brought on fevers which laid them up. Poultry however, they procured upon easier terms; there was great plenty of birds, and they were easily killed; but the flesh of the best of them was very ill tasted, and such was the heat of the climate, that within an hour after they were killed it was as green as grass, and swarmed with maggots. Their principal resource for fresh meat, was the wild hog, with which the island abounds. These creatures are very fierce, and some of them so large that a carcase frequently weighed two hundred pounds. They killed them without much difficulty, but a black belonging to the Tamar contrived a method to snare them, so that they took great numbers of them alive, which was an unspeakable advantage; for it not only ensured their eating the flesh while it was sweet, but enabled them to send a good number of them on board as sea-stores.

In the mean time they were desirous of procuring some beef in an eatable state, with less risk and labour, and Mr. Gore, one of their mates, at last, discovered a pleasant spot upon the north west part of the island, where cattle were in great plenty, and whence they

might be brought to the tents by sea. To this place therefore, the commodore dispatched a party, with a tent, for their accommodation, and sent the boats every day to fetch what they shou'd kill; sometimes, however, there broke such a sea upon the rocks that it was impossible to approach them, and the Tamar's boat unhappily lost three of her best men by attempting it. They were now, upon the whole, pretty well supplied with provisions, especially as they baked fresh bread every day for the sick; and the fatigue of their people being less, there were fewer ill with the fever; but several of them were so much disordered by eating of a very fine looking fish which they caught here, that their recovery was for a long time doubtful.

Besides the fruit already mentioned, this island produces cotton and indigo in abundance, and would certainly be of great value if it was situated in the West Indies. The surgeon of the Tamar enclosed a large spot of ground here, and made a very pretty garden; but they did not stay long enough to derive any advantage from it.

While they lay here, the commodore sent the Tamar to examine the island of Saypan, which is much larger than Tinian, rises higher, and has a much pleasanter appearance. She anchored to the leeward of it, at the distance of a mile from the shore, and in about ten fathom water, with much the same kind of ground as they had in the road of Tinian. Her people landed upon a fine sandy beach which is six or seven mites long, and walked up into the woods, where they saw many trees which were very fit for topmasts. They saw no fowls nor any tracks of cattle; but of hogs and guanicoes there was plenty. They found no fresh water near the

beach, but saw a large pond inland, which they did not examine. They saw large heaps of pearl oyster-shells thrown up together, and other signs of people having been there not long before. They also saw many square pyramidal pillars which are likewise to be found at Tinian.

On the 30th of September, having now been here nine weeks, and their sick being pretty well recovered, the commodore ordered the tents to be struck, and with the forge and oven carried back to the ship: he also laid in about two thousand cocoa-nuts, which he had experienced to be so powerful a remedy for the scurvy, and the next day, October 1, they weighed, hoping that before they should get the length of the Bashe islands, the N. E. monsoon would be set in. He stood along the shore to take in the beef-hunters; but they had very little wind this day and the next, till the evening, when it came to the westward and blew fresh; he then stood to the northward till the morning of the 3d, when they made Anatacan, an island that is remarkably high, and continued their course till Thursday the 10th, when being in latitude  $10^{\circ} 33' N.$  longitude  $136^{\circ} 50' E.$  they found the ship two and twenty miles to the southward of her account, which must have been the effect of a strong current in that direction. The variation here was  $5^{\circ} 10' E.$  and for some time they found it regularly decreasing, so that on the 19th, being in latitude  $21^{\circ} 10' N.$  longitude  $124^{\circ} 17' E.$  the needle pointed due north.

On the 18th they found the ship eighteen miles to the northward of her account, and saw several land birds about the ship, which appeared to be very much tired; they caught one as it was resting upon the booms, and found it very remarkable. It was about as big as a

goose, and all over as white as snow, except the legs and beak which were black; the beak was curved, and of so great a length and thickness, that it is not easy to conceive how the muscles of the neck, which was about a foot long, and as small as that of a crane, could support it. They kept it about four months upon biscuit and water, but it then died, apparently for want of nourishment, being almost as light as a bladder. These birds appeared to have been blown off some island to the northward of them.

The needle continued to point due north till the 22d, when, at six o'clock in the morning, Grafton's island, the northermost of the Bashe islands, bore south, distant six leagues. As the commodore had designed to touch at these islands, he stood for that in sight; but as the navigation from hence to the Streight of Banca is very dangerous, and they had now both a fine morning and a fine gale, he thought it best to proceed on their way, and therefore steered westward again. The principal of these islands are five in number, and by a good observation Grafton's island lies in latitude  $21^{\circ} 8' N.$  longitude  $118^{\circ} 14' E.$  The variation of the compass was now  $1^{\circ} 20' W.$

On the 24th they kept a good look out for the Triangles, which lie without the north end of the Prasil, and form a most dangerous shoal. On the 30th, they saw several trees and large bamboos floating about the ship, and upon sounding had three and twenty fathom, with dark brown sand, and small pieces of shells. The next day they found the ship thirteen miles to the northward of her account, which they judged to be the effect of a current; and on Saturday found her thirty-eight



miles to the southward of her account. Their latitude by observation was  $3^{\circ} 54'$  N. longitude  $103^{\circ} 20'$  E. They had here soundings at forty-two and forty-three fathom, with soft mud.

At seven o'clock on the 3d of October, they saw the island of Timoan, bearing S. W. by W. distant about twelve leagues. As Dampier has mentioned Pulo Timoan as a place where some refreshments are to be procured, they endeavoured to touch there, having lived upon salt provisions, which were now become bad, ever since they were at Tinian; but light airs, calms, and a southerly current, prevented their coming to anchor till late in the evening, of the 5th. They had sixteen fathom at about the distance of two miles from the shore, on a bay on the east side of the island.

The next day the commodore landed to see what was to be got, and found the inhabitants, who are Malays, a surly insolent set of people. As soon as they saw them approaching the shore, they came down to the beach in great numbers, having a long knife in one hand, a spear, headed with iron, on the other, and a cressit or dagger by their side. They went on shore, however, notwithstanding these hostile appearances, and a treaty soon commenced between them; but all they could procure was about a dozen of fowls, and a goat and kid. They had offered them knives, hatchets, bill-hooks, and other things of the same kind; but these they refused with great contempt, and demanded rupees; as they had no rupees, they were at first much at a loss how to pay for their purchase; but at last they bethought themselves of some pocket handkerchiefs, and these they vouchsafed to accept, though they would only take the best.

These people were of small stature, but extremely well made, and of a dark copper-colour. Among them was one old man dressed somewhat in the manner of the Persians; but all the rest were naked, except a handkerchief, which they wore as a kind of turban upon their heads, and some pieces of cloth which were fastened with a silver plate or clasp round their middles. They saw none of their women, and probably some care was taken to keep them out of their sight. The habitations are very neatly built of slit bamboo, and are raised upon posts about eight feet from the ground. Their boats are also well made, some of which were of a large size, in which they supposed that they carried on a trade to Malacca.

The island is mountainous and woody, but they found it pleasant when they were ashore; it produces the cabbage and cocoa-nut trees in great plenty, but the natives did not chuse to let them have any of the fruit. They saw also some rice grounds, but what other vegetable productions Nature has favoured them with, they had no opportunity to learn, as they staid here but two nights and one day. In the bay where the ship rode, there is excellent fishing, though the surf runs very high; they hauled their seine with great success, but could easily perceive that it gave umbrage to the inhabitants, who consider all the fish about these islands as their own. There are two fine rivers that run into this bay, and the water is excellent; it was indeed so much better than what they had on board, that they filled as many casks with it as loaded the boat twice. While they lay here, some of the natives brought down an animal which had the body of an hare, and the legs of a deer; one of the officers bought it, and they should have been glad to

NO. 25.

have kept it alive, but it was impossible for them to procure for it such food as it would eat; it was therefore killed, and they found it very good meat. All the while they lay here, they had thunder, lightning, and rain; and finding that nothing more was to be procured, they sailed again in the morning of the 7th, with a fine breeze off the land. In the afternoon they tried the current, and found it set at S. E. at the rate of a mile an hour.

At seven o'clock in the morning of the 10th, they saw the east end of the island of Lingen, bearing S. W. by W. distant eleven or twelve leagues. The current set S. S. E. at the rate of a mile an hour. At noon it fell calm, and the Dolphin anchored with the kedge in twenty fathom. At one o'clock, the weather having cleared up, they saw a small island bearing S. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. distant ten or eleven leagues.

At one o'clock the next morning they weighed and made sail; and at six the small island bore W. S. W. distant about seven leagues, and some very small islands which they supposed to be Domines islands, W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. distant about seven or eight leagues, a remarkable double peak on the island of Lingen, bearing at the same time W. by N. distant about ten or twelve leagues. Our latitude by observation was now 18' S. The latitude of the east end of Lingen is 10' S. longitude, 105° 15' E. Pulo Taya bears from it nearly S. by W. and is distant about twelve leagues.

On the 11th, at ten o'clock in the morning, they saw a small Chinese junk to the north-east; and at seven the next morning a small island, called Pulo Tote, bearing S. E. by E. distant about twelve leagues. A little to the northward of Pulo Taya is a very small island, called Pulo Topoa. The next day, at four in

the afternoon, there being no wind, they came to an anchor in fourteen fathom with soft ground. Pulo Taya bearing N. W. distant about seven leagues. They tried the current, and found it set E. by S. at the rate of two knots two fathoms an hour. They saw a sloop at anchor about four miles from them, which hoisted Dutch colours. In the night they had violent rain, with hard squalls, during one of which they parted the stream cable, and therefore let go the small bower. At eight in the morning of the 14th, the wind became moderate and bearable, from N. N. W. to W. S. W. They got out their long-boat and weighed the stream anchor, and at nine made sail. They found the current still very strong to the eastward; and at two anchored again in fourteen fathom, Pulo Taya bearing N. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. distant between seven and eight leagues. The vessel which they had seen the day before under Dutch colours, still lying at anchor in the same place. The commodore sent a boat with an officer to speak with her; the officer was received on board with great civility; but was extremely surprised to find that he could not make himself understood, for the people on board were Malays, without a single white man among them; they made tea for their visitors immediately, and behaved with great cheerfulness and hospitality. The vessel was of a very singular construction: her deck was of slit bamboo, and she was steered, not by a rudder, but by two large pieces of timber, one upon each quarter.

The next morning, at six o'clock, they weighed and made sail: at two, Monopin Hill bore S. by E. distant about ten or eleven leagues, and had the appearance of a small island. It bears S. by W. from the Seven Islands, and is distant from them about twelve leagues:

its latitude is  $2^{\circ}$  S. From the Seven Islands they steered S. W. by S. and had regular soundings from twelve to seven fathom, and soon after they saw the coast of Sumatra, bearing from W. S. W. to W. by N. at the distance of about seven leagues. In the evening they anchored in seven fathom; and the next morning, at four, made sail again, and continued their course S. E. by E. till the peak of Monopin Hill bore east, and Batacarang Point, on the Sumatra shore, S. W. to avoid a shoal, called Frederick Hendrick, which is about midway between the Banca and Sumatra shore; the soundings were thirteen and fourteen fathom. They then steered E. S. E. and kept mid channel to avoid the banks of Palambam River, and that which lies off the westernmost point of Banca. When they were abreast of Palambam river, they regularly shoaled their water from fourteen to seven fathom; and when they had passed it, they deepened it again to fifteen and sixteen fathom. They continued to steer E. S. E. between the Third and Fourth Points of Sumatra, which are about ten leagues distant from each other; the soundings, nearest to the Sumatra shore, were all along from eleven to thirteen fathom; and the high land of Queda Banca appeared over the Third Point of Sumatra, bearing E. S. E. From the Third Point to the Second, the course is S. E. by S. at the distance of about eleven or twelve leagues. The high land of Queda Banca, and the Second Point of Sumatra, bear E. N. E. and W. S. W. of each other. The Streight is about five leagues over, and in the mid-channel there is 20 fathom. At six o'clock in the evening, they anchored in thirteen fathom; Monopin Hill bearing N.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. and the Third Point of Sumatra, S. E. by E. distant between two and three leagues. Many



small vessels were in sight, and most of them hoisted Dutch colours. In the night they had fresh gales and squalls, with thunder and lightning, and hard rain; but as their cables were good, they were in no danger, for in this place the anchor is buried in a stiff clay.

On the 17th, in the morning, the current or tide set to the S. E. at the rate of three knots; at five they weighed, with a moderate gale at west, and hazy weather, and in the night the tide shifted, and ran as strongly to the N. W. so that it ebbs and flows here twelve hours.

On the 19th they spoke with an English snow, belonging to the East India Company, which was bound from Bencoolen to Malacca and Bengal. They had now nothing to eat but the ship's provisions, which were become very bad, for all their beef and pork stunk intolerably, and their bread was rotten and full of worms; but as soon as the master of this snow learnt their situation, he generously sent the commodore a sheep, a dozen of fowls, and a turtle, which he verily believed was half his stock, besides two gallons of arrack, and would accept nothing but thanks in return. In the afternoon they worked round the First Point of Sumatra, and their soundings on the north side, at the distance of about a mile and a half from the shore, were fourteen fathom. At half an hour after three they anchored, and sent a boat to sound for the shoals which lie to the northward of the island called Lasipara, which bore S. E. by S. distant about six leagues. Little wind, and a strong tide of flood to the northward, prevented their working between these shoals and the coast of Sumatra till the afternoon of the 20th, the soundings were very regular, being nine or ten fathom as they stood over the island, and five or six when they stood over to Sumatra. At six o'clock

in the evening of the 27th, they steered between the islands Edam and Horn, and entered the road of Batavia. At eight they anchored without the ships, Onrust bearing W. N. W. distant five or six miles. The next day they anchored nearer to the town, and saluted the water fort with eleven guns, which were returned. They found here above a hundred sail great and small, and among others, a large English ship belonging to Bombay, which saluted them with thirteen guns.

There is always lying here a Dutch commodore belonging to the company, who, among his countrymen, is a person of very great consequence. This gentleman thought fit to send his boat on board of the *Dolphin*, with only the cockswain in her, who was a very dirty ragged fellow ; as soon as he was brought to the commodore, he asked whence he came, whither he was bound, and many other questions, which he thought equally impertinent, at the same time pulling out a book, and pen and ink, that he might set down the answers ; but as Commodore Byron was impatient to save him this trouble, he was desired immediately to walk over the ship's side, and put off his boat, with which he was graciously pleased to comply.

When they came to this place they had not one man sick in either of the ships ; but as the commodore knew it to be more unhealthy than any other part of the East Indies, as the rainy season was at hand, and arrack was to be procured in great plenty, he determined to make his stay here as short as possible. He went on shore to wait upon the Dutch governor, but was told that he was at his country house, about four miles distant from the town. He met, however, with an officer, called a she-bander, who is a kind of master of the ceremonies, and

who acquainted him that if he chose to go to the governor immediately, rather than wait for his coming to town, he would attend him ; the commodore accepted his offer, and they set out together in his chariot. The governor received him with great politeness, and told him he might either take a house in any part of the city that that he should like, or be provided with lodgings at the hotel. This hotel is a licensed lodging-house, the only one in the place, and kept by a Frenchman, an artful fellow, who is put in by the governor himself. It is indeed more the appearance of a palace than a house of entertainment, being the most magnificent building in Batavia ; nor would a small edifice answer the purpose, for as there is a penalty of five hundred dollars upon any person in the city who shall suffer a stranger to sleep a single night at his house, the strangers who make it their residence are never few ; all the houses indeed have a stately appearance on the outside, and are elegantly fitted up within, and they were told that the Chinese, of whom there are great numbers at this place, were the architects. The city is large, and the streets well laid out, but they have greatly the appearance of those in the cities of Holland, for a canal runs through most of them, with a row of trees planted on each side ; this is convenient for the merchants, who have every thing brought up to their own doors by water, but it probably contributes to the unhealthiness of the place ; the canal, indeed, as the city is built in a swamp, might be necessary as a drain, but the trees, though they have a pleasant appearance, must certainly prevent the noxious vapours that are perpetually arising, from being dispersed, by obstructing the circulation of the air.

The number of people here is incredible, and they are of almost every nation in the world, Dutch, Portuguese, Chinese, Persians, Moors, Malays, Javanese, and many others ; the Chinese, however, have a large town to themselves, without the walls, and carry on a considerable trade, for they have annually ten or twelve large junks from China ; and to these the opulence of the Dutch at Batavia is in a great measure owing. The beef here is bad, and the mutton scarce, but the poultry and fish are excellent, and in great plenty. Here are also the greatest variety and abundance of the finest fruit in the world, but the musquitoes, centipedes, scorpions, and other noxious vermin, which are innumerable, are extremely troublesome, especially to strangers. The roads, for many miles about the city, are as good as any in England ; they are very broad, and by the side of them runs a canal, shaded by tall trees, which is navigable for vessels of a very large size ; on the other side of the canal are gardens, of a very pleasant appearance, and country houses of the citizens, where they spend as much of their time as possible, the situation being less unwholesome than the city ; and there are so few of them who do not keep a carriage, that it is almost a disgrace to be seen on foot.

At this place the commodore continued till the 10th of December, when, having procured what refreshments he could for his people, and taken on board a sufficient quantity of rice and arrack, to serve for the rest of the voyage, he weighed anchor and made sail. The fort saluted him with eleven guns, and the Dutch commodore with thirteen, which he returned ; they were saluted also by the English ship. They worked down to Prince's island, in the Streight of Sunda, and came to an anchor

there on the 14th. In this passage, the boats came off to them from the Java shore, and supplied them with turtle in such plenty, that neither of the ship's companies eat any thing else. They lay at Prince's island till the 19th, and during all that time they subsisted wholly upon the same food, which was procured from the inhabitants at a very reasonable rate. Having now taken on board as much wood and water as they could stow, they weighed, and got without Java Head before night; but by this time a dangerous putrid fever had broken out among them; three of the crew died, and many others now lay in so dangerous a condition that there were little hopes of their recovery; they did not, however, bury one at Batavia, which, notwithstanding their stay was so short, was thought to be a very extraordinary instance of good fortune; and their sick gradually recovered after they had been a week or two at sea.

Having continued their course without any event worthy of notice, except that one of their best men unhappily fell overboard and was drowned, till the 10th of February, 1766, at six o'clock in the morning, they saw the coast of Africa, bearing from N. N. W. to N. E. distant about seven leagues; it made in several high hills, and white sandy cliffs, and its latitude was  $30^{\circ} 15'$  S. longitude  $21^{\circ} 45'$  E. the variation here was  $22^{\circ}$  W. and their depth of water fifty-three fathom, with a bottom of coarse brown sand.

The commodore stood in for the land, and when he was within about two leagues of it, saw a great smoke rising from a sandy beach. He imagined the smoke there to be made by the Hottentots; yet he was astonished at their chusing this part of the coast for their residence, for it consisted of nothing but sand banks as



far as they could see, without the least bush or a single blade of verdure, and so heavy a sea broke upon the coast, that it was impossible to catch any fish.

At three o'clock in the afternoon of the 12th, they were abreast of Cape Lagullas, from which the coast lies W. N. W. to the Cape of Good Hope, which is distant about thirty leagues. The next day they passed between Penguin island and Green Point, and worked into Table Bay with their top-sails close reefed, there being a strong gale, with hard squalls, S. S. E. At three o'clock in the afternoon they anchored, and saluted the fort, which was returned. The Dutch said, that none of their ships could have worked in such a gale of wind, and that the English ships seemed to come in faster than they were generally able to do when the wind was fair.

The next morning the commodore waited upon the governor, who had sent his coach and six to the water-side for him. He was an old man, but a favourite with all ranks of people; he received our navigators with the greatest politeness, and not only offered him the company's house in the garden for his residence while he should continue at the Cape, but his coach whenever he should think fit to use it.

The Cape is certainly a most excellent place for ships to touch at; it is a healthy climate, a fine country, and abounds with refreshments of every kind. The company's garden is a delightful spot, and at the end of it there is a paddock belonging to the governor, in which are kept a great number of rare and curious animals, and among others, three fine ostriches; and four zebras of an uncommon size. The commodore gave all the people leave to go on shore by turns, and they always contrived

to get very drunk with Cape wine before they came back.

Having continued here three weeks, and during that time refreshed their men, and completed their water; the commodore took leave of the good old governor on the 6th of March, and on the 7th sailed out of the bay, with a fine breeze at S. E.

At six in the morning of the 16th of May, they saw the island of St: Helena, bearing W. by N. at the distance of about sixteen leagues, and about noon, a large ship, which shewed French colours. They pursued their course, and a few days afterwards, as they were sailing with a fine gale, and at a great distance from land, the ship suddenly received a rude shock, as if she had struck the ground; this instantly brought all who were below upon the deck in great consternation, and upon looking out they saw the water to a very large extent, tinged with blood; this put an end to their fears, and they concluded that they must have struck either a whale or a grampus, from which the ship was not likely to receive much damage, nor in fact did she receive any. About this time also they had the misfortune to bury their carpenter's mate, a very ingenious and diligent young man, who had never been well after their leaving Batavia.

They crossed the equator on the 25th, in longitude  $17^{\circ} 10'$  W. and the next morning, Captain Cumming came on board, and informed the commodore that the Tamar's three lower rudder braces on the stern were broken off, which rendered the rudder unserviceable. He immediately sent the carpenter on board, who found the condition of the braces even worse than had been reported, so that the rudder could not possibly be new

hung; he therefore went to work upon a machine, like that which had been fixed to the Ipswich, and by which she was steered home; this machine in about five days he completed, and with some little alterations of his own, it was an excellent piece of work. The Tamar steered very well with it, but as it might not be sufficient to secure her in bad weather, or upon a lee shore, Captain Cumming was ordered to run down to Antigua, that he might there heave the ship down, and get the rudder new hung, with a fresh set of braces which he had with him for that purpose; for the braces with which the ship went out, being of iron, were not expected to last as long as the Dolphin's, the lower ones, with the sheathing, being of copper.

Pursuant to these orders, the Tamar parted company with the Dolphin on the 1st of April, and steered for the Caribbee islands. When they came into latitude  $34^{\circ}$  N. longitude  $35^{\circ}$  W. they had strong gales from W. S. W. to W. N. W. with a great sea, which broke over them continually for six days successively, and run them into latitude  $48^{\circ}$  N. longitude  $14^{\circ}$  W. On the 7th of May, at seven o'clock in the morning, they made the islands of Scilly, having been just nine weeks coming from the Cape of Good Hope, and somewhat more than two and twenty months upon the voyage; on the 9th, the ship came to anchor in the Downs, and the commodore landed the same day at Deal, and set out for London.

---

*End of Commodore Byron's Voyage.*

---

---

AN  
ACCOUNT  
OF A  
*VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD,*  
IN THE YEARS  
1766, 1767, AND 1768,

*By SAMUEL WALLIS, Esq.*

Commander of his Majesty's Ship the *DOLPHIN*,

---





---

# A VOYAGE, &c.

---

## CHAP. I.

---

Captain Wallis commences his Voyage—Loses their consort the Swallow—the Prince Frederick makes signals of Distress—the Swallow overtakes the Dolphin—Passage to Patagonia—Interview with the Natives—Description of the Coast and Inhabitants—Discoveries, &c.

ON Commodore Byron's return (May, 1766) the Dolphin was again sent out under the command of Captain Wallis, the same year, with the Swallow, commanded by Captain Carteret, in prosecution of the same general design of making discoveries in the northern hemisphere. The equipment of the Dolphin was the same as before (see Commodore Byron's Voyage, chap I.) The Swallow was a sloop, mounting 14 guns; her complement was 90 men, with one lieutenant and 22 petty officers.

Captain Wallis having received his commission, dated July 19, 1766, went on board the same day, hoisted the pendant, and began to enter seamen, but according to his orders, took no boys either for himself or any of his officers. The ship was fitted for sea with all possible expedition, during which the articles of war, and the act of parliament were read to the ship's company; on the 26th of July they sailed down the river, and on the 16th of August, at eight o'clock in the morning, anchored in Plymouth Sound. On the 19th the captain re-

ceived his sailing orders, with directions to take the Swallow sloop, and the Prince Frederick store-ship under his command; and this day he took on board, among other things, three thousand weight of portable soup, and a bale of cork-jackets. Every part of the ship was filled with stores and necessaries of various kinds, even to the steerage and state-room, which were allotted to the slops and portable soup. The surgeon offered to purchase an extraordinary quantity of medicines, and medical necessaries, which, as the ship's company might become sickly, he said would in that case be of great service, if room could be found to stow them in; the captain therefore gave him leave to put them into his cabin, the only place in the ship where they could be received, as they consisted of three large boxes.

On the 22d, at four o'clock in the morning, the Dolphin weighed and made sail in company with the Swallow and Prince Frederick, and had soon the mortification to find that the Swallow was a very bad sailer. They proceeded in their voyage without any remarkable incident, till the 7th of September, when about eight o'clock in the morning, they saw the island of Porto Santo, bearing west; and about noon saw the east end of the island of Madeira. About five o'clock they ran between this end of the island and the Deserters. On the side next the Deserters is a low flat island, and near it a needle rock; the side next to Madeira is full of broken rocks, and for that reason is not safe to come within less than two miles of it.

At six in the evening they anchored in Madeira road, about two thirds of a mile from the shore, in 24 fathom, with a muddy bottom; about eight the Swallow and

Prince Frederick also came to an anchor ; and Captain Wallis sent an officer on shore to the governor, to let him know that he would salute him, if he would return an equal number of guns, which he promised to do ; therefore the next morning, at six-o'clock, he saluted him with thirteen guns, and the governor returned thirteen as he had promised. Having taken in a proper quantity of water at this place, with four pipes and ten puncheons of wine, some fresh beef, and a large quantity of onions, they weighed anchor, and continued their voyage.

On the 16th, at six o'clock in the morning, they saw the island of Palma, and found the ship fifteen miles to the southward of her reckoning. As they were sailing along this island, at the rate of no less than eight miles an hour, with the wind at east, it died away at once ; so that within less than two minutes the ship had no motion, though they were at least four leagues distant from the shore. Palma lies in latitude  $28^{\circ} 40'$  N. longitude  $17^{\circ} 48'$  W.\*

They tried the current on the 20th, and found it set S. W. by W. one mile an hour ; this day they saw two herons flying to the eastward, and a great number of bonettoes about the ship, of which they caught eight.

In the night of the 22d, they lost their companion the Swallow, and about eight in the morning saw the island of Sal, bearing S.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. at noon it bore S.  $\frac{3}{4}$  W. distant 8 leagues ; and at noon on Tuesday the 23d, the nearest land of the island of Bonavista bore from S. to W. S. W. distant seven or eight miles, the east end, at the same

---

\* The longitude in this voyage is reckoned from the meridian of London.

time, bearing W. distant two leagues. In this situation they sounded, and had only fifteen fathom, with rocky ground; at the same time they saw a very great rippling, which they supposed to be caused by a reef, stretching off the point about E. S. E. 3 miles, and the breakers without them, distant also about three miles in the direction of S. E. They steered between the rippling and the breakers, but after hauling the ship off about half a mile, they had no soundings. The Prince Frederick passed very near the breakers, in the S. E. but had no soundings; yet these breakers are supposed to be dangerous. The middle of the isle of Sal is in latitude  $16^{\circ} 55'$  N. longitude  $21^{\circ} 59'$  W. the middle of Bonavista is in latitude  $16^{\circ} 10'$  longitude  $23^{\circ}$  W.

On the next day, at six in the morning, the isle of May bore from W. to S. W. six leagues; and soon after the Swallow again joined company. At half past ten o'clock, the west-end of the isle of May bore north at the distance of five miles, and they found a current here setting to the southward at the rate of twenty miles in four and twenty hours. The latitude of this island is  $15^{\circ} 10'$  N. longitude  $22^{\circ} 25'$  W. At noon the south end of the island of St. Iago bore S. W. by W. distant four leagues; and the north-end N. W. distant five leagues. At half an hour after three they anchored in Port Praya, in that island, in company with the Swallow and Prince Frederick, in eight fathom water, upon sandy ground. They had much rain and lightning in the night, and early in the morning of the 25th Captain Wallis sent to the commanding officer at the fort, for leave to get off some water, and other refreshments, which they granted.

They soon learnt that this was the sickly season, and that the rains were so great as to render it extremely difficult to get any thing down from the country to the ships; it happened also, unfortunately, that the small pox, which is extremely fatal here, was as this time epidemic; so that the captain permitted no man to go on shore who had not had that distemper, and he would not suffer even those that had to go into any house. They procured, however, a supply of water and some cattle from the shore, and caught abundance of fish with the seine, which was hauled twice every day; they found also in the valley where they got their water, a kind of large purslain, growing wild in amazing quantities; this was a most welcome refreshment both raw as a sallad, and boiled with the broth and pease, and when they left the place they carried away enough of it to serve them a week.

At half past twelve on the 20th, they weighed and put to sea; in the evening the peak of Fuego bore W. N. W. distant twelve leagues; and in the night the burning mountain was very visible. This day the captain ordered hooks and lines to be served to all the ship's company, that they might catch fish for themselves; but at the same time he also ordered that no man should keep his fish more than four and twenty hours before it was eaten, for he had observed that stale, and even dried fish, had made the people sickly, and tainted the air in the ship.

On the 1st of October, they lost the true trade wind, and had only light and variable gales; and they also found that the ship was set twelve miles to the northward by a current; on the 3d they found a current run S. by E. at the rate of six fathom an hour, or about



twenty miles and an half a day ; on the 7th they found the ship 19 miles to the southward of her reckoning.

On the 20th, their butter and cheese being expended, they began to serve the ship's company with oil, and the captain gave orders that they should also be served with mustard and vinegar once a fortnight during the rest of the voyage.

On the 22d they saw an incredible number of birds, and among the rest a man of war bird, which inclined them to think that some land was not more than sixty leagues distant ; they crossed the equator in longitude  $23^{\circ} 40' W$ .

On the 24th the captain ordered the ship's company to be served with brandy, and reserved the wine for the sick and convalescent. On the 26th the Prince Frederick made signals of distress, upon which the Dolphin bore down to her, and found that she had carried away her fore-top-sail-yard. To supply this loss they gave her their sprit-sail-top-sail-yard, which they could spare, and she hoisted it immediately.

On the 27th she again made signals of distress, upon which Captain Wallis bore to, and sent the carpenter on board her, who returned with an account that she had sprung a leak under the larboard cheek forward, and that it was impossible to do any thing to it till they had better weather. Lieutenant Brine, who commanded her, said that his crew were sickly ; that the fatigue of working the pumps, and constantly standing by the sails, had worn them down ; that their provisions were not good, that they had nothing to drink but water, and that he feared it would be impossible for him to keep company with Captain Wallis, except he could spare him some assistance. For the badness of their provision he

had no remedy, but he sent on board a carpenter and six seamen to assist in pumping and working the ship.

On the 11th of November, having by signal brought the store-ship under their stern, Captain Wallis sent the carpenter, with proper assistants, on board to stop the leak; but they found that very little could be done; they then completed their provisions, and those of the *Swallow*, from her stores, and put on board her all the staves, iron-hoops, and empty oil jars. The next day the captain sent a carpenter and six seamen to relieve the men that had been sent to assist her on the 27th of October, who, by this time, began to suffer much by their fatigue. Several of her crew having the appearance of the scurvy, Captain Wallis sent the surgeon on board her with some medicines for the sick. This day having seen some albatrosses, turtles, and weeds, they sounded, but had no ground with 180 fathom.

On the 19th, being now in latitude  $30^{\circ}$  south, they began to find it very cold; they therefore got up their quarter cloths, and fitted them to their proper places, and the seamen put on their thick jackets. This day they saw a turtle, and several albatrosses, but had no ground with 180 fathom, till the 18th, when they found a soft muddy bottom at the depth of 54 fathom. They were now in latitude  $35^{\circ} 40'$  S. longitude  $49^{\circ} 54'$  W. and this was the first sounding they had after their coming upon the coast of Brazil.

On the 12th, about eight o'clock in the evening, they saw a meteor of a very extraordinary appearance in the north-east, which, soon after they had observed it, flew off in a horizontal line to the south west, with amazing rapidity; it was near a minute in its progress, and it left a train of light behind it so strong, that the deck was

not less illuminated than at noon day. This day they saw a great number of seals about the ship, and had soundings at 55 fathom, with a muddy bottom. The next day, the seals continued, and they had soundings at 55 fathom, with a dark coloured sand ; upon which they bent their cables.

Their soundings continued from 40 to 70 fathom, till the 8th of December, when, about six o'clock in the morning, they saw land bearing from S. W. to W. by S. and appearing like many small islands. At noon, it bore from W. by S. to S. S. W. distant 8 leagues, their latitude then being  $47^{\circ} 16' S.$  longitude  $64^{\circ} 58' W.$  About three o'clock Cape Blanco bore W. N. W. distant six leagues, and a remarkable double saddle W. S. W, distant about three leagues. They had now soundings from 20 to 16 fathom, sometimes with coarse sand and gravel, sometimes with small black stones and shells. At eight in the evening the Tower rock at Port Desire bore S. W. by W. distant about three leagues ; and the extremes of the land from S. by E. to N. W. by N. At nine, Penguin island bore S. W. by W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. distant two leagues ; and at four o'clock in the morning of the 9th, the land seen from the mast-head bore from S. W. to W. by N. This day they saw such a quantity of red shrimps about the ship that the sea was coloured with them.

On the 15th, at seven in the evening, Cape Fairweather bore S. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. distant about four leagues, a low point running out from it S. S. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. They stood off and on all night, and had from 30 to 22 fathom water, with a bottom of sand and mud. At seven the next morning, they shoaled gradually into 12 fathom, with a bottom of fine sand, and soon after into six ; they

then hauled off S. E. by S. somewhat more than a mile ; then steered east five miles, then E. by N. and deepened into 12 fathom. At one o'clock, being about two leagues distant from the shore, the extremes of three remarkable round hills bore from S. W. by W. to W. S. W. At four, Cape Virgin Mary bore S. E. by S. distant about four leagues. At eight they were very near the Cape, and upon the point of it saw several men riding, who made signs for them to come on shore. In about half an hour they anchored in a bay, close under the south side of the Cape, in ten fathom water, with a gravelly bottom. The Swallow and store-ship anchored soon after between the Dolphin and the Cape, which then bore N. by W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. and a low sandy point like Dungeness S. by W. From the Cape there runs a shoal, to the distance of about half a league, which may be easily known by the weeds that are upon it. They found it high water at half an hour after eleven, and the tide rose twenty feet.

The natives continued abreast of the ship all night, making several great fires, and frequently shouting very loud. As soon as it was light the next morning, they saw great numbers of them in motion, who made signs for them to land. About five o'clock Captain Wallis made the signal for the boats belonging to the Swallow and Prince Frederick to come on board, and in the mean time hoisted out their own. These boats being all manned and armed, he took a party of marines, and rowed towards the shore, having left orders with the master to bring the ship's broadside to bear upon the landing place, and to keep the guns loaded with round shot. They reached the beach about six o'clock, and before they went from the boat the captain made signs

to the natives to retire to some distance ; they immediately complied, and he then landed with the captain of the *Swallow*, and several of the officers ; the marines were drawn up, and the boats were brought to a grappling near the shore. He then made signs to the natives to come near, and directed them to sit down in a semicircle, which they did with great order and cheerfulness. When this was done, he distributed among them several knives, scissars, buttons, beads, combs, and other toys, particularly some ribbons to the women, which they received with a very becoming mixture of pleasure and respect. Having distributed his presents he endeavoured to make them understand that he had other things which he would part with, but for which he expected somewhat in return. He shewed them some hatchets and bill hooks, and pointed to guanicoes, which happened to be near, and some ostriches which he saw dead among them ; then making signs at the same time that he wanted to eat ; but they either could not, or would not understand him ; for though they seemed very desirous of the hatchets and the bill hooks, they did not give the least intimation that they would part with any provisions ; no traffic therefore was carried on between them. Each of these people, both men and women, had a horse, with a decent saddle, stirrups, and bridle. The men had wooden spurs, except one, who had a large pair of such as are worn in Spain, brass stirrups, and a Spanish scimeter, without a scabbard ; but notwithstanding these distinctions, he did not appear to have any authority over the rest ; the women had no spurs. The horses appeared to be well made, and nimble, and were about 14 hands high. The people had also many dogs with them, which, as well as the horses, appeared to be of a Spanish breed.



As Captain Wallis had two measuring rods with him, they went round and measured those that appeared to be the tallest among them. One of these was six feet seven inches high, several more were six feet five, and six feet six inches ; but the stature of the greater part of them was from five feet ten to six feet.\* Their complexion is a dark copper colour, like that of the Indians in North America ; their hair is straight, and nearly as harsh as hog's bristles ; it is tied back with a cotton string, but neither sex wears any head dress. They are well made, robust, and bony ; but their hands and feet are remarkably small. They are clothed with the skins of the guanicoe, sewed together into pieces about six feet long, and five feet wide ; these are wrapped round the body, and fastened with a girdle, with the hairy side inwards ; some of them had also what the Spaniards have called a *puncho*, a square piece of cloth made of the downy hair of the guanicoe, through which a hole being cut for the head, the rest hangs round about them as low as the knee. The guanicoe is an animal that in size, make, and colour, resembles a deer, but it has a hump on its back, and no horns. These people wear also a kind of drawers, which they pull up very tight, and buskins, which reach from the mid leg to the instep before, and behind are brought under the heel ; the rest of the foot is without any covering. They observed that some of the men had a circle painted round the left eye, and that others were painted on their arms, and on different parts of the face ; the

---

\* These are the gigantic Indians mentioned in the preceding voyage ; but Captain Wallis's description of them varies a little from that of Commodore Byron's.

eye-lids of all the young women were painted black. They talked much, and some of them called out *Ca-pi-ta-ne*; but when they were spoken to in Spanish, Portuguese, French, and Dutch, they made no reply. Of their own language they could distinguish only one word, which was *chevow*; they supposed it to be a salutation, as they always pronounced it when they shook hands, and when by signs, they asked for any thing. When they were spoken to in English, they repeated the words as plainly as they could; and they soon got by heart the words "Englishmen come on shore."—Every one had a missile weapon of a singular kind, tucked into the girdle. It consisted of two round stones, covered with leather, each weighing about a pound, which were fastened to the two ends of a string about eight feet long. This is used as a sling, one stone being kept in the hand, and the other whirled round the head till it is supposed to have acquired sufficient force, and then discharged at the object. They are so expert in the management of this double headed shot, that they will hit a mark not bigger than a shilling, with both the stones, at the distance of fifteen yards; it is not their custom, however, to strike either the *guanicoe* or the ostrich with them in the chace, but they discharge them so that the cord comes against the legs of the ostrich, or two of the legs of the *guanicoe*, and is twisted round them by the force and swing of the balls, so that the animal being unable to run, becomes an easy prey to the hunter.

While they stayed here, they saw them eat some of their flesh meat raw, particularly the paunch of an ostrich, without any other preparation or cleaning than just turning it inside out, and shaking it. They observ-

ed among them several beads, such as Captain Wallis gave them, and two pieces of red baize, which they supposed had been left there, or in the neighbouring country, by Commodore Byron.

After they had spent about four hours with these people, Captain Wallis made signs to them that he was going on board, and that he would take some of them with him, if they were desirous to go. As soon as he had made himself understood, above an hundred eagerly offered to visit the ship; but he did not chuse to indulge more than eight of the number. They jumped into the boats with the joy and alacrity of children going to a fair, and having no intention of mischief themselves, had not the least suspicion that any was intended against them. They sung several of their country songs while they were in the boat, and when they came on board did not express either the curiosity or wonder which the multiplicity of objects, to them equally strange and stupendous, that at once presented themselves, might be supposed to excite. Captain Wallis took them down into the cabbin, where they looked about them with an unaccountable indifference, till one of them happened to cast his eyes upon a looking-glass; this, however, produced no astonishment, but afforded them infinite diversion; they advanced, retreated, and played a thousand tricks before it, laughing violently, and talking with great emphasis to each other. The captain gave them some beef, pork, biscuit, and other articles of the ship's provisions; they eat indiscriminately, whatever was offered to them, but they would drink nothing but water. From the cabbin he carried them all over the ship, but they looked at nothing with much attention, except the animals which they had on board as live stock; they ex-

amined the hogs and sheep with some curiosity, and were exceedingly delighted with the Guinea hens and turkies; they did not seem to desire any thing that they saw, except apparel, and only one of them, an old man, asked for that; they gratified him with a pair of shoes and buckles, and to each of the others the Captain gave a canvass bag, in which he put some needles ready threaded, a few slips of cloth, a knife, a pair of scissars, some twine, a few beads, a comb, and a looking-glass, with some new sixpences and halfpence, through which a hole had been drilled, that was fitted with a ribbon, to hang round the neck. They offered them some leaves of tobacco, rolled up into what are called segars, and they smoked a little, but did not seem fond of it. The captain showed them the great guns, but they did not appear to have any notion of their use. After he had carried them through the ship, he ordered the marines to be drawn up, and go through part of their exercise. When the first volley was fired, they were struck with astonishment and terror; the old man in particular, threw himself down on the deck, pointed to the muskets, and then striking his breast with his hand, lay sometime motionless, with his eyes shut; by this they supposed he intended to shew them that he was not unacquainted with fire-arms, and their fatal effect. The rest seeing the crew merry, and finding themselves unhurt, soon resumed their cheerfulness and good humour, and heard the second and third volley fired without much emotion; but the old man continued prostrate upon the deck sometime, and never recovered his spirits till the firing was over. About noon, the tide being out, the captain acquainted them by signs that the ship was proceeding further, and that they must go on shore

this he soon perceived they were very unwilling to do ; all, however, except the old man and one more, were got into the boat without much difficulty ; but these stopped at the gang way, where the old man turned about, and went aft to the companion ladder, where he stood some time without speaking a word ; he then uttered what they supposed to be a prayer ; for he many times lifted up his hands and eyes to the heavens, and spoke in a manner and tone very different from what they had observed in their conversation ; his oraison seemed to be rather sung than said, so that they found it impossible to distinguish one word from another. When the captain again intimated that it was proper for him to go into the boat, he pointed to the sun, and then moving his hand round to the west, he paused, looked in his face, laughed, and pointed to the shore ; by this it was easy to understand that he wished to stay on board till sun set, and the captain took no little pains to convince him that they could not stay so long upon that part of the coast, before he could he prevailed upon to go into the boat ; at length, however, he went over the ship's side with his companions, and when the boat put off they all began to sing, and continued their merriment till they got on shore. When they landed, great numbers of those on shore pressed eagerly to get into the boat ; but the officer, on board, having positive orders to bring none of them off, prevented them, though not without great difficulty, and apparently to their extreme mortification and disappointment. When the boat returned on board, Captain Wallis sent her off again with the master, to sound the shoal that runs off from the point ; he found it about three miles broad from north to south, and that to avoid it, it was necessary to



keep four miles off the Cape, in twelve or thirteen fathom water.

About one o'clock, the 17th of December, the captain made the signal and weighed, ordering the Swallow to go ahead, and the store-ship to bring up the rear. The wind was right against them, and blew fresh, so that they were obliged to turn into the Streight of Magellan with the flood-tide, between Cape Virgin Mary and the Sandy Point that resembles Dungeness. When they got abreast of this Point, they stood close into the shore, where they saw two guanicoes, and many of the natives on horseback, who seemed to be in pursuit of them; when the horsemen came near, they ran up the country at a great rate, and were pursued by the hunters, with their slings in their hands ready for the cast; but neither of them was taken while they were within the reach of their sight.

When they got about two leagues to the west of Dungeness, and were standing off shore, they fell in with a shoal upon which they had but seven fathom water at half flood; this obliged them to make short tacks, and keep continually heaving the lead. At half an hour after eight in the evening, they anchored about three miles from the shore, in twenty fathom, with a muddy bottom; Cape Virgin Mary then bearing N. E. by E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. Point Possession W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. at the distance of about five leagues. About half an hour after they had cast anchor, the natives made several large fires abreast of the ship, and at break of day they saw about four hundred of them encamped in a fine green valley, between two hills, with their horses feeding beside them. About six o'clock the next morning, the tide being down, they got again under sail; its course here is from east to west;

it rises and falls thirty feet, and its strength is equal to about three knots an hour. About noon there being little wind, and the ebb running with great force, the Swallow, who was a head, made the signal and came to an anchor; upon which the Dolphin did the same, and so did the store-ship, that was astern.

As they saw great numbers of the natives on horse-back abreast of the ship, the captain sent the lieutenants of the Swallow and the store-ship to the shore, but with orders not to land, as the ships were at too great a distance to protect them. When these gentlemen returned, they said that the boat having lain upon her oars very near the beach, the natives came down in great numbers, whom they knew to be the same persons they had seen the day before, with many others, particularly women and children; that when they perceived the English, had no design to land, they seemed to be greatly disappointed, and those who had been on board the ship waded off to the boat, making signs for it to advance, and pronouncing the words they had been taught; "Englishmen come on shore" very loud, many times; that when they found they could not get the people to land, they would fain have got into the boat, and that it was with great difficulty they were prevented. That they presented them with some bread, tobacco, and a few toys, pointing at the same time to some guanicoes and ostriches, and making signs that they wanted them as provisions, but that they could not make themselves understood; that finding they could obtain no refreshment, they rowed along the shore in search of fresh water, but that seeing no appearance of a rivulet, they returned on board.

At six o'clock on the morning of the 19th they weighed, the Swallow being still ahead, and at noon they anchored in Possession Bay, having twelve fathom, with a clean sandy bottom. They saw a great number of Indians upon the Point, and at night large fires on the Terra del Fuego shore.

From this time to the 22d, they had strong gales and heavy seas, so that they got on but slowly; and they now anchored in 18 fathom, with a muddy bottom. The Asses Ears bore N. W. by W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. The tide here sets S. E. by S. and N. E. by N. at the rate of about three knots an hour; the water rises four and twenty feet, and at this time it was high water at four in the morning.

The next morning they made sail, turning to windward, but the tide was so strong, that the Swallow was set one way, the Dolphin another, and the store-ship a third; there was a fresh breeze, but not one of the vessels would answer her helm. They had various soundings and saw the rippling in the middle ground; in these circumstances, sometimes backing, sometimes filling, they entered the first Narrows. About six o'clock in the evening, the tide being done, the Dolphin anchored on the south shore, in 40 fathom, with a sandy bottom; the Swallow anchored on the north shore, and the store-ship not a cable's length from a sand bank, about two miles to the eastward. The Streight here is only three miles wide, and at midnight, the tide being slack, they weighed and towed the ship through. A breeze sprung up soon afterwards, which continued till seven the next morning, and then died away. They steered from the first Narrows to the second S. W. and had 19 fathom, with a muddy bottom. At eight they anchored.

two leagues from the shore, in 24 fathom, Cape Gregory bearing W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. and Sweepstakes Foreland S. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. The tide here ran seven knots an hour, and such bores sometimes came down, and immense quantities of sorrel, that they expected every moment to be adrift.

On the 25th, they sailed through the second Narrows. In turning through this part of the Streight they had 12 fathom within half a mile of the shore on each side, and in the middle 17 fathom, 22 fathom, and no ground. At five o'clock in the evening, the ship suddenly shoaled from 17 fathom to 5. About half an hour after eight o'clock, the weather being rainy and tempestuous, they anchored under Elizabeth island in 24 fathom, with hard gravelly ground. Upon this island they found great quantities of celery, which, by the direction of the surgeon, was given to the people, with boiled wheat and portable soup, for breakfast every morning. Some of the officers who went ashore with their guns, saw two small dogs, and several places where fires had been recently made, with many fresh shells of muscles and limpets lying about them; they saw also several wigwams or huts, consisting of young trees, which, being sharpened at one end, and thrust into the ground in a circular form, the other ends were brought to meet, and fastened together at the top; but they saw none of the natives.

From this place they saw many high mountains, bearing from S. to W. S. W. several parts of the summits were covered with snow, though it was the midst of summer in this part of the world: they were clothed with wood about three parts of their height, and above with herbage, except where the snow was not yet melted. This was the first place where they had seen wood in all South America.

On the 26th, at two o'clock in the morning, they weighed, and having a fair wind, were abreast of the north end of Elizabeth's island at three; at half an hour after five, being about mid-way between Elizabeth's island and St. George's island, they suddenly shoaled their water from 17 fathom to six; they struck the ground once, but the next cast had no bottom with 20 fathom. The store-ship, which was about half a league to the southward of the Dolphin, had once no more than four fathom, and for a considerable time not seven; the Swallow, - which was three or four miles to the southward, had deep water, for she kept near to St. George's island.

About four o'clock the Dolphin anchored in Port Famine Bay, in 13 fathom, and there being little wind, sent all the boats, and towed in the Swallow and Prince Frederick.

The next morning the weather being squally, they warped the Dolphin farther into the harbour, and moored her with a cable each way in nine fathom. Captain Wallis then sent a party of men to pitch two large tents in the bottom of the bay, for the sick, the wooders, and the sail-makers, who were soon after sent on shore, with the surgeon, the gunner, and some midshipmen.

On the 28th they unbent all the sails, and sent them on shore to be repaired, erected tents upon the banks of Sedger river, and sent all the empty casks on shore, with the coopers to trim them, and a mate and ten men to wash and fill them. They also hauled the seine, and caught fish in great plenty; some of them resembled a mullet, but the flesh was very soft; and among them were a few smelts, some of which were twenty inches long, and weighed four and twenty ounces.



During their stay in this place, they caught fish enough to furnish one meal a day both for the sick and the well; they found also great plenty of celery, and pea-tops, which were boiled with the pease and portable soup; besides these, they gathered great quantities of fruit that resembled the cranberry, and the leaves of a shrub somewhat like our thorn, which were remarkably sour. When they arrived, all the crew began to look pale and meagre; many had the scurvy to a great degree, and upon others there were manifest signs of its approach; yet in a fortnight there was not a scorbutic person in either of the ships. Their recovery was effected by their being on shore, eating plenty of vegetables, being obliged to wash their apparel, and keep their persons clean by daily bathing in the sea.

The next day they set up the forge on shore; and from this time, the armourers, carpenters, and the rest of the people were employed in refitting the ship, and making ready for sea. In the mean time a considerable quantity of wood was cut, and put on board the store-ship, to be sent to Falkland's island; and as Captain Wilson well knew there was no wood growing there, he caused some thousands of young trees to be carefully taken up with their roots, and a proper quantity of earth; and packing them in the best manner he could, he put them also on board the store-ship, with orders to deliver them to the commanding officer at Port Egremont, and to sail for that place with the first fair wind, putting on board two of his seamen, who being in an ill state of health when they first came on board, were now altogether unfit to proceed in the voyage.

On the 14th of January they got all their people and tents on board; having taken in seventy-five tons of

water from the shore, and twelve months provisions of all kinds, at whole allowance, for the Dolphin, and ten months for the Swallow, from on board the store-ship, the captain sent the master in the cutter, which was victualled for a week, to look out for anchoring-places on the north shore of the Streight.

After several attempts to sail, the weather obliged them to continue in their old station till the 17th, when the Prince Frederick Victualler sailed for Falkland's island, and the master returned from his expedition. The master reported that he had found four places, in which there was good anchorage, between the place where they lay and Cape Froward; that he had been on shore at several places, where he had found plenty of wood and water close to the beach, with abundance of cranberries and wild celery. He reported also, that he had seen a great number of currant bushes full of fruit, though none of them were ripe, and a great variety of beautiful shrubs in full blossom, bearing flowers of different colours, particularly red, purple, yellow, and white, besides great plenty of the winter's bark, a grateful spice which is well known to the botanists of Europe. He shot several wild ducks, geese, gulls, a hawk, and two or three of the birds which the sailors call a Race-horse.

At five o'clock in the morning of the 18th, they made sail, and at noon, being about two miles from the shore, Cape Froward bore N by E. a bluff point N. N. W. and Cape Holland W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. Their latitude at this place by observation, was  $54^{\circ} 3'$  S. and they found the Streight to be about six miles wide. Soon after Captain Wilson sent a boat into Snug Bay, to lie at the anchoring place, but the wind coming from the land, he stood off again all

night ; and at a mile from the shore they had no ground with 140 fathom.

The next morning the Swallow having made the signal for anchoring under Cape Holland, they ran in, and anchored in ten fathom, with a clear sandy bottom. Upon sending the boats out to sound, they discovered that they were very near a reef of rocks ; they therefore tripped the anchor, and dropped farther out, where they had 12 fathom, and were about half a mile from the shore, just opposite to a large stream of water which falls with great rapidity from the mountains, for the land here is of a stupendous height.

On the 20th they got off some water and great plenty of wild celery, but could get no fish, except a few muscles. The captain sent off the boats to sound, and found that there was good anchorage at about half a mile from the shore, quite from the Cape to four miles below it ; and close by the Cape a good harbour, where a ship might refresh with more safety than at Port Famine, and avail herself of a large river of fresh water, with plenty of wood, celery, and berries ; though the place affords no fish except muscles.

Having completed their wood and water, they sailed from this place on the 22d, about three o'clock in the afternoon. At six the next morning, the Swallow made the signal for having found anchorage ; and at eight they anchored in a bay under Cape Gallant, in 10 fathom, with a muddy bottom. The boats being sent out to sound, found good anchorage every where, except within two cables' length S. W. of the ship, where it was coral, and deepened to 16 fathom. In the afternoon the captain sent out the master to examine the bay, and a large lagoon ; and he reported that the lagoon

was the most commodious harbour they had yet seen in the Streight, having five fathom at the entrance, and from four to five in the middle: that it was capable of receiving a great number of vessels, had three large fresh water rivers, and plenty of wood and celery. They had here the misfortune to have a seine spoiled, by being entangled with the wood that lies sunk at the mouth of these rivers; but though they caught but little fish they had an incredible number of wild ducks, which they found a very good succedaneum. The mountains are here very lofty, and the master of the Swallow climbed one of the highest, hoping that from the summit he should obtain a sight of the South Sea, but he found his view intercepted by mountains still higher on the southern shore; before he descended, however, he erected a pyramid, within which he deposited a bottle containing a shilling, and a paper, on which was written the ship's name, and the date of the year.

In the morning of the 24th they took two boats and examined Cordes bay, which they found very much inferior to that in which the ship lay; it had indeed a larger lagoon, but the entrance of it was narrow, and barred by a shoal, on which there was not sufficient depth of water for a ship of burden to float; the entrance of the bay also was rocky, and within it the ground was foul. Here they saw an animal that resembled an ass, but it had a cloven hoof, as they discovered afterwards by tracking it, and as swift as a deer. This was the first animal they had seen in the Streight, except at the entrance, where they found the guanicoes that they would fain have trafficked for with the Indians. They shot at this creature, but could not hit it; probably it is altogether unknown to the naturalists of Europe. The coun-

try about this place has the most dreary and forlorn appearance that can be imagined ; the mountains on each side the Streight are of an immense height ; about one fourth of the ascent is covered with trees of a considerable size ; in the space from thence to the middle of the mountain there is nothing but withered shrubs ; above these are patches of snow, and fragments of broken rock ; and the summit is altogether rude and naked, towering above the clouds in vast crags that are piled upon each other, and look like the ruins of Nature devoted to everlasting sterility and desolation.

They went over in two boats to the Royal islands, and sounded, but found no bottom ; a very rapid tide set through wherever there was an opening ; and they cannot be approached by shipping without the most imminent danger. The current sets easterly through the whole four and twenty hours, and the indraught should by all means be avoided. The latitude of Cape Gallant road is  $53^{\circ} 50' S.$

In this station they continued, taking in wood and water, and gathering muscles and herbs, till the morning of the 27th, when a boat that had been sent to try the current, returned with an account that it set nearly at the rate of two miles an hour, but the wind being northerly, they might probably get round to Elizabeth bay or York Road before night ; they therefore weighed with all expedition.

On the 28th they opened York Road, the Point bearing N. W. at the distance of half a mile ; at this time the ship was taken a-back, and a strong current with a heavy squall drove them so far to leeward, that it was with great difficulty they got into Elizabeth Bay, and anchored in 12 fathom near a river. The Swallow being



at anchor off the point of the bay, and very near the rocks, Captain Wallis sent all the boats with anchors and hausers to her assistance, and at last she was happily warped to windward into good anchorage. Soon after sun-set they saw a great smoke on the southern shore, and another on Prince Rupert's island.

Early in the morning Captain Wallis sent the boats on shore for water, and soon after their people landed, three canoes put off from the south shore, and landed sixteen of the natives on the east point of the bay. When they came within about a hundred yards of the English they stopped, called out, and made signs of friendship; the crew did the same, shewing them some beads and other toys. At this they seemed pleased, and began to shout; the English imitated the noise they made, and shouted in return; the Indians then advanced, still shouting, and laughing very loud. When the parties met they shood hands, and the sailors presented the Indians with several of the toys which they had shewn them at a distance. They were covered with seal skins, which stunk abominably, and some of them were eating the rotten flesh and blubber raw, with a keen appetite and great seeming satisfaction. Their complexion was the same as that of the people they had seen before, but they were low of stature, the tallest of them not being more than five feet six: they appeared to be perishing with cold, and immediately kindled several fires. They were armed with bows, arrows, and javelins; the arrows and javelins were pointed with flint, which were wrought into the shape of a serpent's tongue; and they discharged both with great force and dexterity, scarce ever failing to hit a mark at a considerable distance. To kindle a fire they strike a pebble against

a piece of mundic, holding under it to catch the sparks, some moss or down, mixed with a whitish earth, which takes fire like tinder ; they then take some dry grass, of which there is every where plenty, and putting the lighted moss into it, wave it to and fro, and in about a minute it blazes. When the boat returned, she brought three of them on board the ship, but they seemed to regard nothing with any degree of curiosity, except the sailors, clothes and a looking-glass ; the looking-glass afforded them as much diversion as it had done the Patagonians, and it seemed to surprise them more ; when they first peeped into it, they started back, first looking at the crew and then at each other ; they then took another peep, as it were by stealth, starting back as before, and then eagerly looking behind it ; when by degrees they became familiar with it, they smiled, and seeing the image smile in return, they were exceedingly delighted, and burst into fits of the most violent laughter. They left this, however, and every thing else, with perfect indifference, the little they possessed being to all appearance equal to their desires. They eat whatever was given them, but would drink nothing but water.

When they left the ship, Captain Wallis went on shore with them, and by this time several of their wives and children were come to the watering place. He distributed some trinkets among them, with which they seemed pleased for a moment, and they gave some of their arms in return, they gave also several pieces of mundic, such as is found in the tin mines of Cornwall ; they made them understand that they found it in the mountains, where there are probably mines of tin, and perhaps of more valuable metal. As this seems to be the most dreary and inhospitable country in the world, not

excepted the worst parts of Sweden and Norway, the people seem to be the lowest and most deplorable of all human beings. When they embarked in their canoes, they hoisted a seal skin for a sail, and steered for the southern shore, where they saw many of their hovels; and they remarked that not one of them looked either behind them or at the ship, so little impression had the wonders they had seen made upon their minds.

In this station they continued till the 3d of February. At about half an hour past twelve they weighed, and in a sudden squall were taken a back, so as that both ships were in the most imminent danger of being driven ashore on a reef of rocks; the wind however suddenly shifted, and they happily got off without damage. At five o'clock in the afternoon, the tide being done, and the wind coming about to the west, they bore away for York Road, and at length anchored in it; the Swallow at the same time being very near Island Bay, under Cape Quod, endeavoured to get in there, but was by the tide obliged to return to York Road. They found the tide here very rapid and uncertain; in the stream it generally set to the eastward, but it sometimes, though rarely, set westward six hours together. This evening they saw five Indian canoes come out of Bachelor's River, and go up Jerom's Sound.

The next morning the boats which Capt. Wallis had sent out to sound both the shores of the Streight and all parts of the bay, returned with an account that there was good anchorage within Jerom's Sound, and all the way thither from the ship's station at the distance of about half a mile from the shore; also between Elizabeth and York Point, near York Point, at the distance of a cable and a half's length from the weeds, in 16 fathom, with a

muddy bottom. There were also several places under the islands on the south shore where a ship might anchor; but the force and uncertainty of the tides, and the heavy gusts of wind that came off the high lands, by which these situations were surrounded, rendered them unsafe. Soon after the boats returned, the captain put fresh hands into them, and went himself up Bachelor's River; they found a bar at the entrance, which at certain times of the tide must be dangerous. They hauled the seine, and should have caught plenty of fish if it had not been for the weeds and stumps of trees at the bottom of the river. They then went ashore, where they saw many wigwams of the natives, and several of their dogs, who, as soon as they came in sight, ran away. They also saw some ostriches, but they were beyond the reach of their pieces; they gathered mussels, limpets, sea-eggs, celery, and nettles in great abundance. About three miles up this river, on the west side, between Mount Misery and another mountain of a stupendous height, there is a cataract which has a very striking appearance; it is precipitated from an elevation of above four hundred yards; half the way it rolls over a very steep declivity, and the other half is a perpendicular fall. The sound of this cataract is not less awful than the sight.

They were detained here by contrary winds, till ten in the morning of the 14th, when they weighed, and in half an hour the current set the ship towards Bachelor's River; they then put her in stays, and while she was coming about, which she was long in doing, they drove over a shoal where they had little more than 16 feet water with rocky ground; so that their dangers were very great, for the ship drew 16 feet 9 inches aft, and 15 feet

one inch forward; as soon as the ship gathered way, they happily deepened into three fathom; within two cables' length they had five, and in a very short time they got into deep water. They continued plying to windward till four o'clock in the afternoon, and then finding that they had lost ground, they returned to their station, and again anchored in York Road, where they remained till the morning of the 17th. They now weighed, and towed out of the road. At nine, though they had a fine breeze at west, the Dolphin was carried with great violence by a current towards the south shore; the boats were all towing ahead, and the sails asleep, yet they drove so close to the rock, that the oars of the boats were entangled in the weeds. In this manner they were hurried along near three quarters of an hour, expecting every moment to be dashed to pieces against the cliff, from which they were seldom farther than a ship's length, and very often not half so much. They sounded on both sides, and found that next the shore they had from 14 to 20 fathom, and on the other side of the ship no bottom; as all their efforts were ineffectual, they resigned themselves to their fate, and waited the event in a state of suspense very little different from despair. At length, however, they opened St. David's Sound, and a current that rushed out of it sent them into the mid-channel. During all this time the Swallow was on the north shore, and consequently could know nothing of their danger till it was past. They now sent the boats out to look for an anchoring-place; and at noon Cape Quod bore N. N. E. and Saint David's head S. E.

About one o'clock the boats returned, having found an anchoring place in a small bay, to which they gave the name of Butler's Bay, it having been discovered by



Mr. Butler, one of the mates. It lies to the west of Rider's Bay, on the south shore of the Streight, which is here about two miles wide. They ran in with the tide which set fast to the westward, and anchored in 16 fathom water. The extremes of the bay from W. by N. to N.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. are about a quarter of a mile asunder; a small rivulet, at the distance of somewhat less than two cables' length, bore S.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. and Cape Quod N. at the distance of four miles. At this time the Swallow was at anchor in Island Bay on the north shore, at about six miles distance.

Captain Wallis now sent all the boats out to sound round the ship and in the neighbouring bays; and they returned with an account that they could find no place fit to receive the ship, neither could any such place be found between Cape Quod and Cape Notch. Here they remained till the 20th, when about noon the clouds gathered very thick to the westward, and before one it blew a storm, with such rain and hail as had scarcely ever been seen. They immediately struck the yards and top masts, and having run out two hausers to a rock, they hove the ship up to it; they then let go the small bower, and veered away, and brought both cables ahead: at the same time they carried out two more hausers, and made them fast to two other rocks, making use of every expedient in their power to keep the ship steady. The gale continued to increase till six o'clock in the evening, and to their great astonishment the sea broke quite over the fore-castle in upon the quarter-deck, which, considering the narrowness of the Streight, and the smallness of the bay in which they were stationed, might well have been thought impossible. Their danger here was very great, for if the cables had parted, as

they could not run out with a sail, and as they had not room to bring the ship up with any other anchor, they must have been dashed to pieces in a few minutes, and in such a situation it is highly probable that every soul would immediately have perished; however, by eight o'clock the gale was become somewhat more moderate, and gradually decreasing during the night, they had tolerable weather the next morning. Upon heaving the anchor, they had the satisfaction to find that their cable was sound, though their hausers were much rubbed by the rocks, notwithstanding they were parcelled with old hammacoes, and other things. The first thing the captain did after performing the necessary operations about the ship, was to send a boat to the Swallow to inquire how she had fared during the gale; the boat returned with an account that she had felt but little of the gale; but that she had been very near being lost, in pushing through the islands two days before, by the rapidity of the tide; that notwithstanding an alteration which had been made in her rudder, she steered and worked so ill, that every time they got under weigh they were apprehensive that she could never safely be brought to an anchor again; he was therefore requested to consider that she could be of very little service to the expedition, and to direct what he thought would be best for the service. Captain Wallis answered, that as the lords of the Admiralty had appointed her to accompany the Dolphin, she must continue to do it as long as it was possible; that as her condition rendered her a bad sailer, he would wait her time, and attend her motions, and that if any disaster should happen to either, the other should be ready to afford such assistance as might be in her power.

They continued here eight days, during which time they completed their wood and water, dried their sails, and sent great part of the ship's company on shore, to wash their clothes and stretch their legs, which was the more necessary, as the cold, snowy, and tempestuous weather had confined them too much below. They caught mussels and limpets, and gathered celery and nettles in great abundance. The mussels were the largest they had ever seen, many of them being from five to six inches long; they caught also great plenty of fine, firm, red fish, not unlike a gurnet, most of which were from four to five pounds weight. At the same time they made it part of the employment of every day to try the current, which they found constantly setting to the eastward. The master having been sent out to look for anchoring places, returned with an account that he could find no shelter, except near the shore, where it should not be sought but in cases of the most pressing necessity. He landed upon a large island on the north side of Snow Sound, and being almost perished with cold, the first thing he did was to make a large fire, with some small trees which he found upon the spot. He then climbed one of the rocky mountains, with Mr. Pickersgill, a midshipman, and one of the seamen, to take a view of the Streight, and the dismal regions that surround it. He found the entrance of the sound to be full as broad as several parts of the Streight, and to grow but very little narrower, for several miles inland on the Terra del Fuego side. The country on the south of it was still more dreary and horrid than any he had yet seen; it consisted of craggy mountains, much higher than the clouds, that were altogether naked from the base to the summit, there not being a single shrub, nor even a blade of grass

to be seen upon them ; nor were the vallies between them less desolate, being entirely covered with deep beds of snow, except here and there where it had been washed away, or converted into ice, by the torrents which were precipitated from the fissures and crags of the mountains above, where the snow had been dissolved ; and even these vallies, in the patches that were free from snow, where as destitute of verdure as the rocks between which they lay.

On the first of March, early in the morning, they saw the Swallow under sail, on the north shore of Cape Quod. At seven they weighed, and stood out of Butler's Bay, but it falling calm, soon afterwards, the boats were obliged to take the vessel in tow, having with much difficulty kept clear of the rocks ; the passage being very narrow, they sent the boats, about noon, to seek for anchorage on the north shore. And about three o'clock in the afternoon, there being little wind, anchored, with the Swallow, under the north shore, in a small bay, where there is a high, steep, rocky mountain, the top of which resembles the head of a lion, for which reason they called the bay Lion's Cove. They had here 40 fathom, with deep water close to the shore, and at half a cable's length without the ship, no ground. They sent the boats to the westward in search of anchoring places, and at midnight they returned with an account that there was an indifferent bay at the distance of about four miles, and that Goodluck Bay was three leagues to the westward. The next day the wind being northerly, they made sail from Lion's Cove, and at five anchored in Goodluck Bay, at the distance of about half a cable's length from the rocks, in 28 fathom water. A rocky island at the west extremity of the bay bore N. W. by

W. distant about a cable's length and a half, and a low point, which makes the eastern extremity of the bay, bore E. S. E. distant about a mile. Between this point and the ship, there were many shoals, and the bottom of the bay, two rocks, the largest of which bore N. E. by N. the smallest N. by E. From these rocks, shoals run out to the S. E. which may be known by the weeds that are upon them; the ship was within a cable's length of them; when she swung with her stern in shore, they had sixteen fathom, with coral rock; when she swung off they had 50 fathom, with sandy ground. Cape Notch bore from them W. by S.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. distant about one league; and in the intermediate space there was a large lagoon which they could not sound, the wind blowing too hard all the while they lay here. After they had moored the ship, they sent two boats to assist the Swallow, towed her into a small bay, where, as the wind was southerly, and blew fresh, she was in great danger, for the Cove was not only small, but full of rocks, and open to the south-easterly winds.

All the day following, and all the night, they had hard gales, with a great sea, and much hail and rain. On the 4th they had gusts so violent, that it was impossible to stand on the deck; they brought whole sheets of water all the way from Cape Notch, which was a league distant, quite over the deck. They did not last more than a minute, but were so frequent, that the cables were kept on a constant strain, and there was the greatest reason to fear that they would give way. It was a general opinion that the Swallow could not possibly ride it out, and some of the men were so strongly prepossessed with the notion of her being lost, that they fancied they saw some of her people coming over the rocks towards



their ship. The weather continued so bad till the 7th, that they could send no boat to enquire after her; but the gale being then more moderate, a boat was dispatched about four o'clock in the morning, which about the same hour in the afternoon, returned with an account that the ship was safe, but that the fatigue of the people had been incredible, the whole crew having been upon the deck near three days and three nights. At midnight the gusts returned, though not with equal violence, with hail, sleet, and snow. The weather being now extremely cold, and the people never dry, Captain Wallis got up, the next morning, eleven bales of woollen stuff, called Fearnought, which is provided by the government, and set all the taylors to work to make them into jackets, of which every man in the ship had one. He sent also seven bales of the same cloth to the Swallow, which made every man on board a jacket of the same kind; and he cut up three bales of a finer cloth, and made jackets for the officers of both ships, which were very acceptable. In this situation they were obliged to continue a week, during which time the captain put both his own ship and the Swallow upon two-thirds allowance, except brandy; but continued the breakfast as long as greens and water were plenty.

On the 15th, about noon, they saw the Swallow under sail, and it being calm, they sent their launch to assist her. In the evening the launch returned, having towed her into a very good harbour on the south shore, opposite to where they lay. The account that they received of this harbour determined them to get into it as soon as possible; the next morning therefore, at eight o'clock, they sailed from Goodluck Bay, and thought themselves happy to get safe out of it. When they got

abreast of the harbour where the Swallow lay, they fired several guns, as signals for her boats to assist them in getting in; and in a short time the master came on board them, and piloted them to a very commodious station, where they anchored in 28 fathom; with a muddy bottom. This harbour, which is sheltered from all winds, and excellent in every respect, they called Swallow Harbour. There are two channels into it, which are both narrow, but not dangerous, as the rocks are easily discovered by the weeds which grow upon them. The next morning, at nine o'clock, the wind coming easterly, they weighed, and sailed from Swallow Harbour. At noon they took the Swallow in tow, but at five, there being little wind, they cast off the tow. At eight in the evening, the boats which had been sent out to look for anchorage, returned with an account that they could find none; at nine they had fresh gales, and at midnight Cape Upright bore S. S. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W.

On the 17th, in the morning, they took the Swallow again in tow, but were again obliged to cast her off and tack, as the weather became very thick, with a great swell, and they saw land close under their lee. As no place for anchorage could be found, Captain Carteret advised Captain Wallis to bear away for Upright bay, to which he consented; and as he was acquainted with the place, he went ahead; the boats were ordered to go between him and the shore, and they followed. At eleven o'clock there being little wind, they opened a large lagoon, and a current setting strongly into it, the Swallow was driven among the breakers close upon the lee shore; to aggravate the misfortune, the weather was very hazy, there was no anchorage, and the surf ran very high. In this dreadful situation she made sig-

nals of distress, and they immediately sent their launch, and other boats, to her assistance; the boats took her in tow, but their utmost efforts to save her would have been ineffectual, if a breeze had not suddenly come down from a mountain, and waisted her off. As a great swell came on about noon, they hauled over to the north shore. They soon found themselves surrounded with islands, but the fog was so thick, that they knew not where they were, nor which way to steer. Among these islands, the boats were sent to cast the lead, but no anchorage was to be found; they then conjectured that they were in the Bay of Islands, and that they had no chance to escape shipwreck, but by hauling directly out; this, however, was no easy task, for the captain was obliged to tack almost continually, to weather some island or rock. At four o'clock in the afternoon, it happily cleared up for a minute, just to shew them Cape Upright, for which they directly steered, and at half an hour after five anchored, with the Swallow, in the bay. When they dropped the anchor they were in 24 fathom, and after they had veered away a whole cable, in 46, with a muddy bottom. In this situation, a high bluff on the north shore bore N. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. distant five leagues, and a small island within them S. by E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  E. Soon after they had anchored, the Swallow drove to leeward, notwithstanding she had two anchors ahead, but was at last brought up, in 70 fathom, about a cable's length astern of the Dolphin. At four o'clock in the morning, Captain Wallis sent the boats, with a considerable number of men, and some hausers and anchors, on board her, to weigh her anchors, and warp her up to windward. When her best bower anchor was weighed, it was found entangled with the small one; therefore

he found it necessary to send the stream cable on board, and the ship was hung up by it. To clear her anchors, and warp her into a proper birth, cost them the whole day, and was not at last effected without the utmost difficulty and labour.

On the 18th they had fresh breezes, and sent the boats to sound across the Streight. Within half a mile of the ship, they had 40, 45, 50, 70, 100 fathom, and then had no ground till within a cable's length of the lee shore, where they had 90 fathom. They now moored the ship in 78 fathom with the stream anchor.

The next morning, while the people were employed in getting wood and water, and gathering celery, and mussels, two canoes full of Indians, came alongside of the ship. They had much the same appearance as the poor wretches whom they had seen before in Elizabeth's bay. They had on board some seal's flesh, blubber, and penguins, all which they eat raw. Some of the crew who were fishing with a hook and line, gave one of them a fish somewhat bigger than a herring, alive, as it came out of the water. The Indian took it hastily, as a dog would take a bone, and instantly killed it, by giving it a bite near the gills; he then proceeded to eat it, beginning with the head, and going on to the tail, without rejecting either the bones, fins, scales, or entrails. They eat every thing that was given them, indifferently, whether salt or fresh, dressed or raw, but would drink nothing but water. They shivered with cold, yet had nothing to cover them but a seal skin, thrown loosely over their shoulders, which did not reach to their middle; and they observed, that when they were rowing, they threw even this by, and sat stark naked. They had with them some javelins, rudely pointed with bone,

with which they used to strike seals, fish, and penguins, and they observed, that one of them had a piece of iron, about the size of a common chissel, which was fastened to a piece of wood, and seemed to be intended rather for a tool than a weapon. They had all sore eyes, which was imputed to their sitting over the smoke of their fires, and they smelt more offensively than a fox, which perhaps was in part owing to their diet, and in part to their nastiness. Their canoes were about fifteen feet long, three broad, and nearly three deep; they were made of the bark of trees, sewn together, either with the sinews of some beast, or thongs cut out of a hide. Some kind of rush was laid into the seams, and the outside was smeared with a rosin, or gum, which prevented the water from soaking into the bark. Fifteen slender branches, bent into an arch, were sewed transversely to the bottom and sides, and some strait pieces were placed across the top, from gunwale to gunwale, and securely lashed at each end; upon the whole, however, it was poorly made, nor had these people any thing among them in which there was the least appearance of ingenuity. The captain gave them a hatchet or two, with some beads, and a few other toys, with which they went away to the southward, and they saw no more of them.

While they lay here, they sent the boats, as usual, in search of anchoring places, and having been ten leagues to the westward, they found but two; one was to the westward of Cape Upright, in the Bay of Islands, but was very difficult to enter and get out of; the other was called Dolphin Bay, at ten leagues distance, which was a good harbour, with even ground in all parts. They saw several small coves, which were all dangerous, as



in them it would be necessary to let go the anchor within half a cable's length of a lee-shore, and steady the ship with hausers fastened to the rocks. The people belonging to one of the boats, spent a night upon an island, upon which, while they were there, six canoes landed about thirty Indians. The Indians ran immediately to the boat, and were carrying away every thing they found in her : the sailors discovered what they were doing, just time enough to prevent them. As soon as they found themselves opposed, they went to their canoes, and armed themselves with long poles, and javelins pointed with the bones of fish. They did not begin an attack, but stood in a threatening manner ; the English, who were two and twenty in number, acted only on the defensive, and by parting with a few trifles to them, they became friends, and behaved peaceably the rest of the time they staid.

For many days they had hail, lightning, rain, and hard gales, with a heavy sea, so that they thought it impossible for the ship to hold, though she had two anchors ahead, and two cables an end. The men, however, were sent frequently on shore for exercise, which contributed greatly to their health, and procured an almost constant supply of mussels and greens. Among other damages that they had sustained, their fire-place was broken to pieces, they therefore found it necessary to set up the forge, and employ the armourers to make a new back ; they also made lime of burnt shells, and once more put it into a useful condition.

The weather becoming moderate on the 30th, they dried the sails, which, though much mildewed, they had not before been able to loose, for fear of setting the ship adrift ; they also aired the spare sails, which they found

much injured by the rats, and employed the sail-makers to mend them. Captain Carteret having represented that his fire-place, as well as Captain Wallis's, had been broken to pieces, the armourers made him also a new back, and set it up with lime that they made upon the spot, in the same manner as had been done on board the *Dolphin*. This day they saw several canoes, full of Indians, put to shore on the east side of the bay, and the next morning several of them came on board, and proved to be the same that those who were out in the boat, had met with on shore. They behaved very peaceably, and were dismissed with a few toys, as usual.

On the 1st of April several other Indians came off to the ship, and brought with them some of the birds, called Race Horses. They purchased the birds for a few trifles, and made them a present of several hatchets and knives.

The next day the master of the *Swallow*, who had been sent out to seek for anchoring places, returned, and reported that he had found three on the north shore, which were very good; one about four miles to the eastward of Cape Providence, another under the east-side of Cape Tamar, and the third about four miles to the eastward of it; but he said that he found no place to anchor under Cape Providence, the ground being rocky. This day two canoes came on board, with four women and three young children in each. The women were somewhat fairer than the men, who seemed to pay a very tender attention to them, especially in lifting them in and out of the canoes. To these young visitors Captain Wallis gave necklaces and bracelets, with which they seemed mightily pleased. It happened that while

some of these people were on board, and the rest waiting in their canoes by the ship's side, the boat was sent on shore for wood and water. The Indians who were in the canoes, kept their eyes fixed upon the boat while she was manning, and the moment she put off from the ship, they called out with great vociferation to those that were on board, who seemed to be much alarmed, and hastily handing down the children, leaped into their canoes, without uttering a word. No one could guess at this sudden emotion, but they saw the men in the canoes pull after the boat with all their might, hallooing and shouting with great appearance of perturbation and distress. The boat out-rowed them, and when she came near the shore, the people on board discovered some women gathering mussels among the rocks. This at once explained the mystery; the poor Indians were afraid that the strangers, either by force or favour, should violate the prerogative of a husband, of which they seemed to be more jealous than the natives of some other countries, who in their appearance are less savage and sordid. The English, to make them easy, immediately lay upon their oars, and suffered the canoes to pass them. The Indians, however, still continued to call out to their women, till they took the alarm and ran out of sight, and as soon as they got to land, drew their canoes upon the beach, and followed them with the utmost expedition.

They continued daily to gather mussels, till the 5th, when several of the people being seized with fluxes, the surgeon desired that no more mussels might be brought into the ship. The weather being still tempestuous and unsettled, they remained at anchor till ten o'clock in the morning of the 10th, and then, in company with the

Swallow, made sail. They steered about W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. all night, and at six the next morning had run eight and thirty miles by the log. There being now but little wind they were obliged to make all the sail they could to get without the Streight's mouth. At eleven o'clock Captain Wallis would have shortened sail for the Swallow, but it was not in his power, for as a current set them strongly down upon the Isles of Direction, and the wind came to the west, it became absolutely necessary to carry sail in order to clear them. Soon after they lost sight of the Swallow, and never saw her afterwards. At first Captain Wallis was inclined to have gone back into the Streight, but a fog coming on, and the sea rising very fast, they were all of opinion that it was indispensably necessary to get an offing as soon as possible; for except they pressed the ship with sail, before the sea rose too high, it would be impracticable either to weather Terra del Fuego on one tack, or Cape Victory on the other. They quitted a dreary and inhospitable region on the 11th of April, 1767; a region where, in the midst of summer, the weather was cold, gloomy and tempestuous.

---

## CHAP. II.

---

Discovery of several Islands during the passage from the Streight of Magellan to King George's the Third's Island, called Otaheite—Interview with the Natives—their Thefts—the Dolphin strikes, but is extricated from her Danger—Attacks from the Natives—Reconciliation, and a regular Trade established.

ON the 12th, the Dolphin continued her course to the westward, and after having cleared the Streight, they saw a great number of gannets, sheerwaters, pinta-do-birds, and many others, about the ship, and had for the most part strong gales, hazy weather, and heavy seas, so that they were frequently brought under their courses, and there was not a dry place in the ship for some weeks together. In twelve days after, the men began to fall down very fast in colds and fevers, in consequence of the upper works being open, and their clothes and beds continually wet.

On the 26th, the weather being moderate and fair, they dried all the people's clothes, and got the sick upon the deck, to whom they gave salop, and wheat boiled with portable soup, every morning for breakfast, and all the ship's company had as much vinegar and mustard as they could use; portable soup was also constantly boiled in their pease and oatmeal. The hard gales with frequent and violent squalls, and a heavy sea, soon returned, and continued with very little intermission. The



ship pitched so much, that they were afraid she would carry away her masts, and the men were again wet in their beds.

On the 30th the variation, by azimuth, being  $8^{\circ} 30'$  E. their latitude was  $32^{\circ} 50'$ ; longitude, by account,  $100'$  W. Captain Wallis began to keep the ship to the northward, they had no chance of getting westing in this latitude; and the surgeon was of opinion, that in a little time the sick would so much increase, that they should want hands to work the ship, if they could not get into better weather.

The following week they saw a tropic bird, and several sea swallows, sheerwaters, and porpoises, about the ship.

On the 14th of May, about four o'clock in the afternoon, they saw a large flock of brown birds, flying to the eastward, and something which had the appearance of high land, in the same quarter. They bore away for it till sun-set, and it still having the same appearance, they continued their course: but at two in the morning, having run 18 leagues without making it, they hauled the wind, and at day-light nothing was to be seen. They had now the satisfaction to find their ailing people mend apace. Their latitude was  $24^{\circ} 50'$  S. their longitude, by account,  $106^{\circ}$  W. During all this time they were looking out for the Swallow.

May 17, the carpenters were employed in caulking the upper works of the ship, and repairing and painting the boats, and the next day a sheep was given among the people that were sick and recovering; who, on the 22d, began to fall down in the scurvy, upon which, at the surgeon's representation, wine was served to them; wort was also made for them of malt, and each man

had half a pint of pickled cabbage every day. The variation from 4 to 5° E.

On the 26th, and following days, they saw some grampuses, and several birds, among which was one about the size of a Swallow, which some thought was a land bird. Their men now began to look very pale and sickly, and to fall down very fast in the scurvy, notwithstanding all their care and attention to prevent it. They had vinegar and mustard without limitation, wine instead of spirits, sweet wort and salop. Portable soup was still constantly boiled in their pease and oatmeal; their birth and clothes were kept perfectly clean; the hammocks were constantly brought upon the deck at eight o'clock in the morning, and carried down at four in the afternoon. Some of the bed hammocks were washed every day; the water was rendered wholesome by ventilation, and every part between decks frequently washed with vinegar.

On the 3d of June they saw several gannets, which, with the uncertainty of the weather, inclined them to hope that land was not very far distant. The next day a turtle swam close by the ship; and on the 5th they saw many birds, which confirmed their hope that some place of refreshment was near; and at length, in the forenoon of the 6th, Jonathan Puller, a seaman, called out from the mast head, "Land in the W. N. W." At noon it was seen plainly from the deck, and found to be a low island, at about five or six leagues distance. The joy which every one on board felt at this discovery, can be conceived by those only who have experienced the danger, sickness, and fatigue of such a voyage as they had performed. When within about five miles of this island, they saw another, bearing N. W.

by W. About three o'clock in the afternoon, being very near the island that was first discovered, they brought to, and the captain sent Mr. Furneaux, his second lieutenant (his first lieutenant being very ill) with the boats manned and armed, to the shore. As he approached it, they saw two canoes putting off, and paddle away with great expedition towards the island that lay to leeward. At seven in the evening the boats returned, and brought with them several cocoa-nuts, and a considerable quantity of scurvy-grass; they brought also some fish-hooks that were made of oyster-shells, and some of the shells of which they were made. They reported that they had seen none of the inhabitants, but had visited three huts, or rather sheds, consisting only of a roof, neatly thatched with cocoa-nut and palm leaves, supported upon posts, and open all round. They saw also several canoes building, but found no fresh water, nor any fruit but cocoa-nuts. They sounded, but found no anchorage, and it was with great difficulty that they got on shore, as the surf ran very high. They now stood off and on all night, and early the next morning boats were sent out again to sound, with orders, if possible, to find a place where the ship might come to anchor; but at eleven o'clock they returned with no better success than before. The people said that the whole island was surrounded by a reef, and that although on the weather side of the island there was an opening through it, into a large bason, that extended to the middle of the island, yet they found it so full of breakers, that they could not venture in; neither indeed had they been able to land on any part of the island, the surf, running still higher than it had done the day before. As it would therefore answer no purpose to continue

here, the boats were hoisted in, and they stood away for the other island, which bore S.  $22^{\circ}$  E. distant about four leagues. The island which they now quitted, having been discovered on Whitsun-eve, was called Whitsun Island. It is about four miles long, and three wide. Its latitude is  $19^{\circ} 26'$  S. and its longitude, by observation,  $137^{\circ} 56'$  W.

When they came under the lee of the island, the captain sent lieutenant Furneaux, with the boats manned and armed, to the shore, where he saw about fifty of the natives armed with long pikes, and several of them running about with fire-brands in their hands. He ordered Mr. Furneaux to go to that part of the beach where they saw the people, and endeavour to traffic with them for fruit and water, or whatever else might be useful; at the same time being particularly careful to give them no offence. He ordered him also to employ the boats in sounding for anchorage. About seven o'clock he returned, and said that he could find no ground with the line, till he came within half a cable's length of the shore, and that there it consisted of sharp rocks, and lay very deep.

As the boat approached the shore, the Indians thronged down towards the beach, and put themselves upon their guard with their long pikes, as if to dispute landing. The men then lay upon their oars, and made signs of friendship, shewing at the same time several strings of beads, ribbons, knives, and other trinkets. The Indians still made signs to them that they should depart, but at the same time, eyed the trinkets with a kind of wishful curiosity. Soon after, some of them advanced a few steps into the sea, and the men making signs that they wanted cocoa-nuts and water, some of them

brought down a quantity of both, and ventured to hand them into the boat; the water was in cocoa-nut shells, and the fruit was stripped of its outward covering, which is probably used for various purposes. For this supply they were paid with the trinkets that had been shewn them, and some nails, upon which they seemed to set a much greater value. During this traffick, one of the Indians found means to steal a silk handkerchief, in which some of their small merchandise was wrapped up, and carried it clear off, with its contents, so dexterously, that nobody observed him. The English made signs that a handkerchief had been stolen, but the Indians either could not, or would not understand them. The boat continued about the beach, sounding for anchorage, till it was dark; and having many times endeavoured to persuade the natives to bring down some scurvy-grass, without success, she returned on board.

Captain W. stood off and on with the ship all night, and as soon as the day broke, he sent the boats again, with orders to make a landing, but without giving any offence to the natives, that could possibly be avoided. When their boats came near the shore, the officer was greatly surprised to see seven large canoes, with two stout masts in each, lying just in the surf, with all the inhabitants upon the beach, ready to embark. They made signs to the English to go higher up; they readily complied, and as soon as they went ashore, all the Indians embarked, and sailed away to the westward, being joined by two other canoes at the west end of the island. About noon, the boats returned, laden with cocoa-nuts, palm-nuts, and scurvy grass. Mr. Furneaux, who commanded the expedition, said that the Indians had left nothing behind them but four or five ca-



noes. He found a well of very good water, and described the island as being sandy and level, full of trees, but without underwood, and abounded with scurvy-grass. The canoes, which steered about W. S. W. as long as they could be seen from the mast-head, appeared to be about thirty feet long, four feet broad, and three and an half deep. Two of these being brought alongside of each other, were fastened together, at the distance of about three feet asunder, by cross-beams, passing from the larboard gunwale of one, to the starboard gunwale of the other, in the middle and near to each end. The inhabitants of this island were of a middle stature, and dark complexion, with long black hair, which hung loose over their shoulders. The men were all well made, and the women handsome. Their clothing was a kind of coarse cloth or matting, which was fastened about their middle, and seemed capable of being brought up round their shoulders.

In the afternoon Captain Wallis sent Lieutenant Furneaux with the boats again on shore. He had with him a mate and twenty men, who were to make a rolling way for getting the casks down to the beach from the well. The captain gave orders that he should take possession of the island, in the name of King George the Third, and give it the name of Queen Charlotte's Island, in honour of her Majesty. The boats returned freighted with cocoa-nuts and scurvy-grass, and the officer said that he had found two more wells of good water, not far from the beach. Captain Wallis was at this time very ill, yet he went ashore with the surgeon, and several of the people, who were enfeebled by the scurvy, to take a walk. He found the wells so convenient, that he left the mate and twenty men on shore to fill water, and or-

dered a week's provisions to be sent them from the ship, they being already furnished with arms and ammunition. In the evening he returned on board, with the surgeon and the sick, leaving only the waterers on shore. As they had not been able to find any anchorage, they stood off and on all night.

On the 9th, in the morning, he sent all the empty water casks on shore; the surgeon and the sick were also sent for the benefit of another airing, but he gave them strict orders that they should keep near the water side, and in the shade; that they should not pull down or injure any of the houses, nor, for the sake of the fruit, destroy the cocoa-trees, which he appointed proper persons to climb. At noon, the rolling way being made, the cutter returned laden with water, but it was with great difficulty got off the beach, as it is all rock, and the surf that breaks upon it, is often very great. At four he received another boat load of water, and a fresh supply of cocoa-nuts, palm-nuts, and scurvy-grass, as they could procure. About eight o'clock all the boats and people came on board, with the water and refreshments, but the cutter, on coming off, shipped a sea, which almost filled her with water; the barge was happily near enough to assist her, by taking great part of her crew on board, while the rest freed her, without any other damage than the loss of the cocoa-nuts and greens that were on board. At noon they hoisted the boats in, and there being a great sea, with a dreadful surf rolling in upon the shore, and no anchorage, it was thought prudent to leave this place with such refreshments as they had got. The people who had resided upon shore saw no appearance of metal of any kind, but several tools, which were made of shells and stones, sharpened and

fitted into handles, like adzes, chissels, and awls. They saw several canoes building, which are formed of planks, sewed together, and fastened to several small timbers, that pass transversely along the bottom and up the sides. They saw several repositories of the dead, in which the body was left to putrify under a canopy, and not put under the ground. When they sailed, they left a union jack flying upon the island, with the ship's name, the time of their being there, and an account of their taking possession of that place, and Whitsun Island, in the name of his Britannic Majesty, cut on a piece of wood, and in the bark of several trees. They also left hatchets, nails, glass bottles, beads, shillings, sixpences, and halfpence, as presents to the natives, and as an atonement for the disturbance they had given them. Queen Charlotte's Island, is about six miles long, and one mile wide, lies in latitude  $10^{\circ} 18'$  S. longitude, by observation,  $138^{\circ} 4'$  W. and they found the variation here to be  $4^{\circ} 46'$  E.

Having made sail with a fine breeze, about one o'clock they saw an island W. by S. Queen Charlotte's Island at this time bearing E. by N. distant 15 miles. About half an hour after three they were within about three quarters of a mile of the east end of the island, and ran close along the shore, but had no soundings. The east and west ends are joined to each other by a reef of rock, over which the sea breaks into a lagoon, in the middle of the island, which, therefore had the appearance of two islands, and seemed to be about six miles long, and four broad. The whole of it is low land, full of trees, but they saw not a single cocoa-nut, nor any huts; they found, however, at the westernmost end, all the canoes and people who had fled at their approach, from Queen Charlotte's Island, and some more. They

counted eight double canoes, and about fourscore people, men, women, and children. The canoes were drawn upon the beach, the women and children were placed near them, and the men advanced with their pikes and firebrands, making a great noise, and dancing in a strange manner. They observed that this island was sandy, and that under the trees there was no verdure. As the shore was every where rocky, as there was no anchorage, and as they had no prospect of obtaining any refreshment, they set sail at six o'clock in the evening from this island, to which the Captain gave the name of Egmont's Island, in honour of the Earl of Egmont, then first Lord of the Admiralty. It lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 20'$  S. longitude, by observation,  $138^{\circ} 30'$  W.

On the 11th, at one o'clock, they saw an island in the W. S. W. and stood for it. At four in the afternoon, they were within a quarter of a mile of the shore, and ran along it, sounding continually, but could get no ground. It is surrounded on every side by rock, on which the sea breaks very high. It is full of trees, but not one coconut, and has much the same appearance with Egmont Island, but is much narrower. Among the rocks, at the west end they saw about sixteen of the natives, but no canoes; carried long pikes or poles in their hands, and seemed to be, in every respect, the same kind of people that they had seen before. As nothing was to be had here, and it blew very hard, they made sail till eight in the evening, and then brought to. To this island, which is about six miles long, and from one mile to one quarter of a mile broad, the captain gave the name of Gloucester Island, in honour of his Royal Highness the Duke. It lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 11'$  S, and longitude, by observation,  $140^{\circ} 4'$  W.

At five o'clock the next morning, they made sail, and soon after saw another island. At ten o'clock the weather being tempestuous, with much rain, they saw a long reef, with breakers on each side of the island, and therefore brought the ship to, with her head off the shore. To this island Captain Wallis gave the name of Cumberland's Island, in honour of his Royal Highness the Duke. It lies low, and is about the same size as Queen Charlotte's Island.

At day-break on the 13th, they saw another small low island, in the N. N. W. right to windward. It had the appearance of small flat keys. This place the captain called Prince William Henry's Island, in honour of his Majesty's third son. It lies in latitude  $19^{\circ}$  S. longitude, by observation,  $141^{\circ} 6'$  W.

Soon after day-light on the 17th, they saw land bearing W. by N. and making in a small round hummock. At noon, when it bore N.  $64^{\circ}$  W. distant about five leagues, its appearance greatly resembled the Mewstone in Plymouth Sound, but it seemed to be much larger. At five in the evening this island bore N. W. distant about eight miles. They then hauled the wind, and stood off and on all night. At ten they saw a light upon the shore, which, though the island was small, proved that it was inhabited, and gave them hopes that they should find anchorage near it. They observed with great pleasure, that the land was very high, and covered with cocoa trees; a sure sign that there was water.

The next morning Captain Wallis sent Lieutenant Furneaux to the shore, with the boats manned and armed, and all kinds of trinkets, to establish a traffick with the natives, for such refreshments as the place would afford. While they were getting out the boats,



several canoes put off from the island, but as soon as the people on board saw them make towards the shore, they put back. At noon, the boats returned, and brought with them a pig and a cock, with a few plantains and cocoa-nuts. Mr. Furneaux reported, that he had seen at least an hundred of the inhabitants, and believed there were many more upon the island ; but that having been all around it, he could find no anchorage, nor scarcely a landing place for the boat. When he reached the shore, he came to a grappling, and threw a warp to the Indians upon the beach, who caught it and held it fast. He then began to converse with them by signs, and observed that they had no weapon among them, but that some of them had white sticks, which seemed to be ensigns of authority, as the people who bore them kept the rest of the natives back. In return for the pig and the cock, he gave them some beads, a looking-glass, a few combs, with several other trinkets, and a hatchet. The women, who had been kept at a distance, as soon as they saw the trinkets, ran down in a crowd to the beach, with great eagerness, but were soon driven away by the men, at which they expressed much disappointment and vexation. While this traffick was carrying on, a man came secretly round a rock, and diving down, took up the boat's grappling, and at the same time the people on shore who held the warp, made an effort to draw her into the surf. As soon as this was perceived by the people on board, they fired a musket over the man's head who had taken up the grappling, upon which he instantly let it go, with marks of great terror and astonishment ; the people on shore also let go the rope. The boats after this, lay some time upon their oars, but the officer finding that he

could get nothing more, returned on board. Both the men and women were clothed, and Mr. Furneaux brought a piece of their cloth away with him. The inhabitants appeared to be more numerous than the island could support, and for this reason (especially as he saw some large double canoes upon the beach) he imagined there were islands of larger extent, not far distant, where refreshments in great plenty might be procured, and hoped that they might be less difficult of access. As Captain Wallis thought this a reasonable conjecture, he hoisted in the boats, and determined to run farther to the westward. To this place, which is nearly circular, and about two miles over, he gave the name of Osnaburgh Island, in honour of Prince Frederick, who is bishop of that see. It lies in latitude  $17^{\circ} 51' S.$  and longitude  $147^{\circ} 30' W.$  the variation here was  $7^{\circ} 10' E.$

Having bore away, in about half an hour they discovered very high land in the W. S. W. As the weather was thick and squally, they brought to for the night, or at least till the fog should break away. On the 19th, at two o'clock in the morning, it being very clear, they made sail again; at day-break they saw the land, at about five leagues distance, and steered directly for it; but at eight o'clock, when they were close under it, the fog obliged them again to lie to, and when it cleared away they were much surprised to find themselves surrounded by some hundred of canoes. They were of different sizes, and had on board different numbers, from one to ten, so that in all of them together, there could not be less than eight hundred people. When they came within pistol shot of the ship, they lay by, gazing with great astonishment, and by turns conferring with each other. In the mean time the English shewed them trinkets of va-

rious kinds, and invited them on board. Soon after, as the crew continued to make signs of invitation, a fine, stout, lively young man ventured on board; he came up by the mizen chains, and jumped out of the shrouds upon the top of the awning. They made signs to him to come down upon the quarter deck, and handed up some trinkets to him; he looked pleased, but would accept of nothing till some of the Indians came along-side, and after much talk, threw a few branches of plantain-tree on board the ship; he then accepted the presents, and several others very soon came on board, at different parts of the ship, not knowing the proper entrance. As one of these Indians was standing near the gangway, on the larboard side of the quarter-deck, one of the goats butted him upon the haunches; being surprised at the blow, he turned hastily about, and saw the goat raised upon his hind-legs, ready to repeat the blow. The appearance of this animal, so different from any he had ever seen, struck him with such terror, that he instantly leaped over-board; and all the rest, upon seeing what had happened, followed his example with the utmost precipitation; they recovered, however, in a short time, from their fright, and returned on board. After having a little reconciled them to their goats and sheep, the Captain shewed them their hogs and poultry, and they immediately made signs that they had such animals as these. He then distributed trinkets and nails among them, and made signs that they should go on shore and bring them some of their hogs, fowls, and fruit, but they did not seem to understand his meaning; they were, in the meantime, watching an opportunity to steal some of the things which happened to lie in their way, but they were generally detected in the attempt. However, one

of the midshipmen happening to come where they were standing, with a new-laced hat upon his head, began to talk to one of them by signs; while another of them came behind him, and suddenly snatching off the hat, leaped over the taffarel into the sea, and swam away with it.

As they had no anchorage here, they stood along the shore, sending the boats at the same time to sound at a less distance. As none of these canoes had sails, they could not keep up with them, and therefore soon paddled back towards the shore. The country has the most delightful and romantic appearance that can be imagined: towards the sea it is level, and is covered with fruit-trees of various kinds, particularly the coconut. Among these are the houses of the inhabitants, consisting only of a roof, and at a distance having greatly the appearance of a long barn. The country within, at about the distance of three miles, rises into lofty hills, that are crowned with wood, and terminate in peaks, from which large rivers are precipitated into the sea. About three o'clock in the afternoon, they brought to abreast of a large bay, where there was an appearance of anchorage. The boats were immediately sent to sound it, and while they were thus employed, a great number of canoes gathered round them. Captain Wallis now suspected that the Indians had a design to attack them, and as he was very desirous to prevent mischief, he made the signal for the boats to come on board, and at the same time, to intimidate the Indians, he fired a nine-pounder over their heads. As soon as the cutter began to stand towards the ship, the Indians in their canoes, though they had been startled by the thunder of their nine-pounder, endeavoured to cut her off. The

boat, however, sailing faster than the canoes could paddle, soon got clear of those that were about her ; but some others, that were full of men, way-laid her in her course, and threw several stones into her, which wounded some of the people. Upon this, the officer on board fired a musquet, loaded with buck-shot, at the man who threw the first stones, and wounded him in the shoulder. The rest of the people in the canoe, as soon as they perceived their companion wounded, leapt into the sea, and the other canoes paddled away in great terror and confusion. As soon as the boats reached the ship, they were hoisted on board, and just as she was about to stand on, they observed a large canoe, under sail, making after them. As the captain thought she might have some chief on board, or might have been dispatched to bring him a message from some Chief, he determined to wait for her. She sailed very fast, and was soon along side of the ship, but they did not observe among those on board, any one that seemed to have an authority over the rest. One of them, however, stood up, and having made a speech, which continued about five minutes, threw on board a branch of the plantain tree. They understood this to be a token of peace, and they returned it, by handing over one of the branches of the plantain that had been left on board by their first visitors : with this and some toys, that were afterwards presented to him, he appeared to be much gratified, and after a short time, went away.

The officers who had been sent out with the boats, said that they had sounded close to the reef, and found as great a depth of water as at the other islands : however, as the captain was on the weather side of the island, he had reason to expect anchorage in running to



leeward. He therefore took this course, but finding breakers that ran off to a great distance from the south end of the island, he hauled the wind, and continued turning to windward all night, in order to run down on the east side of the island.

At five o'clock in the morning of the 20th, they made sail, the land bearing N. W. by W. distant ten leagues; and there seemed to be land five leagues beyond it, to the N. E. a remarkable peak, like a sugar loaf, bore N. N. E. when they were about two leagues from the shore, which afforded a most delightful prospect, and was full of houses and inhabitants. They saw several large canoes near the shore, under sail, but they did not steer towards the ship. At six o'clock in the evening, they were abreast of a fine river, and the coast having a better appearance here than in any other part they had seen, the captain determined to stand off and on all night, and try for anchorage in the morning. As soon as it was dark, they saw a great number of lights all along the shore. At day-break the next morning, they sent out boats to sound, and soon after they made the signal for 20 fathom. This produced an universal joy, and they immediately ran in, and came to an anchor in 17 fathom, with a clear sandy bottom. They lay about a mile distant from the shore, opposite to a fine run of water; the extremes of the land bearing from E. S. E. to N. W. by W. As soon as they had secured the ship, the captain sent the boats to sound along the coast, and look at the place where they saw the water. At this time, a considerable number of canoes came off to the ship, and with them hogs, fowls, and fruit in great plenty, which they purchased for trinkets and nails. But when the boats made towards the shore, the canoes, most of

which were double, and very large, sailed after them. At first they kept at a distance, but as the boats approached the shore, they grew bolder, and at last three of the largest ran at the cutter, staved in her quarter, and carried away her out-rigger, the Indians preparing at the same time to board her, with their clubs and paddles in their hands. The sailors being thus pressed, were obliged to fire, by which one of the assailants was killed, and another much wounded. Upon receiving the shot, they both fell overboard, and all the people who were in the same canoe, instantly leaped into the sea after them; the other two canoes dropped astern, and the boats went on without any farther interruption. As soon as the Indians, who were in the water, saw that the boats stood on without attempting to do them any farther hurt, they recovered their canoe, and hauled in their wounded companions. They set them both upon their feet to see if they could stand, and finding they could not, they tried whether they could sit upright: one of them could, and him they supported in that posture, but perceiving that the other was quite dead, they laid the body along at the bottom of the canoe. After this some of the canoes went ashore, and others returned again to the ship to traffic, which is a proof that their conduct had convinced them that while they behaved peaceably they had nothing to fear, and that they were conscious they had brought the mischief, which had just happened upon themselves. The boats continued sounding till noon, when they returned with an account that the ground was very clear, that it was at the depth at five fathom, within a quarter of a mile of the shore, but that there was a very great surf where they had seen the water. The officers said, that the inhabitants

swarmed upon the beach, and that many of them swam off to the boat with fruit, and bamboos filled with water. They said that they were very importunate with them to come on shore, particularly the women, who came down to the beach, and stripping themselves naked, endeavoured to allure them by many wanton gestures, the meaning of which could not possibly be mistaken. In the afternoon Captain Wallis sent the boats again to the shore, with some barecas, or small casks, which are filled at the head, and have a handle by which they are carried, to endeavour to procure some water, of which they began to be in great want. In the mean time many of the canoes continued about the ship, but the Indians had been guilty of so many thefts, that the captain would not suffer any more of them to come on board.

At five in the evening, the boats returned with only two barecas of water, which the natives had filled for them; and as a compensation for their trouble, they thought fit to detain all the rest. The sailors, who did not leave their boat, tried every expedient they could think of to induce the Indians to return their water vessels, but without success, and the Indians, in their turn, were very pressing for them to come on shore, which they thought it prudent to decline. There were many thousands of the inhabitants of both sexes, and a great number of the children on the beach, when the boats came away.

The next morning the Captain sent the boats on shore again for water, with nails, hatchets, and such other things as he thought most likely to gain the friendship of the inhabitants. In the mean time, a great number of canoes came off to the ship, with bread-fruit,

plantains, a fruit resembling an apple, only better, fowls, and hogs, which they purchased with beads, nails, knives, and other articles of the like kind, so that they procured pork enough to serve the ship's company two days, at a pound per man. When the boats returned, they brought only a few calabashes of water, for the number of people on the beach was so great, that they would not venture to land, though the young women repeated the allurements which they practised the day before, with still more wanton, and, if possible, less equivocal gestures. Fruit and provisions of various kinds were brought down and ranged upon the beach, upon which the crew were also invited to partake, as an additional inducement for them to leave the boat. They continued, however, inexorable, and shewing the Indians the *harecas* on board, made signs that they should bring down those which had been detained the day before; to this the Indians were inexorable in their turn, and the English therefore weighed their grapplings, and sounded all round the place, to see whether the ship could come in near enough to cover the waterers, in which case they might venture on shore, in defiance of the whole island. When they put off, the women pelted them with apples and bananas, shouting, and shewing every mark of derision and contempt that they could devise. They reported that the ship might ride in four fathom water, with sandy ground, at two cables' length from the shore, and in five fathom water at three cables' length. The wind here blew right along the shore, raising a great surf on the side of the vessel, and on the beach.

At day-break the next morning, they weighed, with a design to anchor off the watering-place. As they

were standing off, to get farther to windward, they discovered a bay about six or eight miles to leeward, over the land, from the mast-head, and immediately bore away for it, sending the boats ahead to sound. At nine o'clock the boats making the signal for twelve fathom, they hauled round a reef, and stood in, with a design to come to an anchor; but when they came near the boats, one of which was on each bow, the ship struck. Her head continued immoveable, but her stern was free; and, upon casting the lead, they found the depth of water, upon the reef or shoal, to be from 17 fathom to two and a half; they clewed all up as fast as possible, and cleared the ship of what lumber there happened to be upon the deck, at the same time getting out the long boat, with the stream and kedge anchors, the stream cable and hausers, in order to carry them without the reef, that when they had taken ground, the ship might be drawn off towards them, by applying a great force to the capstern, but unhappily without the reef they had no bottom. Their condition was now very alarming, the ship continued beating against the rock with great force, and they were surrounded by many hundred canoes, full of men; they did not, however, attempt to come on board them, but seemed to wait in expectation of their shipwreck. In the anxiety and terror of such a situation, they continued near an hour, without being able to do any thing for their deliverance, except staving some water casks in the fore-hold, when a breeze happily springing up from the shore; the ship's head swung off. They immediately pressed her with all the sail they could make; upon which she began to move, and was very soon once more in deep water. They now stood off, and the boats being sent to lee-



ward, found that the reef ran down to the westward, about a mile and a half, and that beyond it there was a very good harbour. The master, after having placed a boat at the end of the reef, and furnished the long-boat with anchor and hausers, and a guard to defend her from an attack of the Indians, came on board, and piloted the ship round the reef into the harbour, where, about twelve o'clock, she came to an anchor in 17 fathom water, with a fine bottom of black sand.

Upon examining her bottom they could not discover that she had received any damage, except that a small piece was beaten off the bottom of her rudder. She did not appear to admit any water, but the trussle-trees, at the head of all the masts, were broken short, which they supposed to have happened while she was beating against the rock. Their boats lost their grapplings upon the reef, but as they had reason to hope that the ship was sound, they gave them very little concern. As soon as the ship was secured, the captain sent the master, with all the boats manned and armed, to sound the upper part of the bay, that if he found good anchorage he might warp the ship up within the reef, and anchor her in safety. The weather was now very pleasant, a great number of canoes were upon the reef, and the shore was crowded with people. About four in the afternoon the master returned, and reported, that there was every where good anchorage; captain Wallis therefore determined to warp the ship up the bay early in the morning, and in the mean time he put the people at four watches, one watch to be always under arms; loaded and primed all the guns, fixed musquetoons in all the boats, and ordered all the people who were not upon the watch, to repair to the quarters assigned them, at

a moment's warning, there being a great number of canoes, some of them very large, and full of men, hovering upon the shore, and many smaller venturing to the ship, with hogs, fowls, and fruit, which they purchased of them, much to the satisfaction of both parties; and at sun-set all the canoes rowed into the shore.

On the 24th, at six o'clock in the morning, they began to warp the ship up the harbour, and soon after, a great number of canoes came under her stern. As Captain Wallis perceived that they had hogs, fowls, and fruit on board, he ordered the gunner, and two midshipmen, to purchase them for knives, nails, beads, and other trinkets, at the same time prohibiting the trade to all other persons on board. By eight o'clock, the number of canoes was greatly increased, and those that came last up were double, of a very large size, with twelve or fifteen stout men in each. He observed with some concern, that they appeared to be furnished rather for war than trade, having very little on board except round stones; he therefore sent for Mr. Furneaux, his first lieutenant, being still very ill, and ordered him to keep the fourth watch constantly at their arms, while the rest of the people were warping the ship. In the mean time more canoes were continually coming off from the shore, which were freighted very differently from the rest, for they had on board a number of women who were placed in a row, and who, when they came near the ship, made all the wanton gestures that can be conceived. While these ladies were practising their allurements, the large canoes, which were freighted with stones, drew together very close round the ship, some of the men on board singing in a hoarse voice, some blow-

ing conchis, and some playing on a flute. After some time, a man who sat upon a canopy that was fixed on one of the large double canoes made signs that he wished to come up to the ship's side; the captain immediately intimated his consent, and when he came along-side, he gave one of the men a bunch of red and yellow feathers, making signs that he should carry it to the captain. He received it with expressions of amity, and immediately got some trinkets to present him in return, but to his great surprise he had put off to a little distance from the ship, and upon his throwing up the branch of a cocoa-nut tree, there was an universal shout from all the canoes, which at once moved towards the ship, and a shower of stones was poured into her on every side. As an attack was now begun, in which their arms only could render them superior to the multitude that assailed them, especially as great part of the ship's company was in a sick and feeble condition, the guard was ordered to fire; two of the quarter-deck guns, which had been loaded with small shot, were also fired nearly at the same time, and the Indians appeared to be thrown into some confusion; in a few minutes, however, they renewed the attack, and all the crew that were able to come upon deck, having by this time got to their quarters, the captain ordered them to fire the great guns, and to play some of them constantly at a place on shore, where a great number of canoes were still taking in men, and pushing off towards the ship with the utmost expedition. When the great guns began to fire, there were not less than three hundred canoes about the ship, having on board at least two thousand men; many thousands were also upon the shore, and more canoes coming from every quarter; the firing, however, soon

drove away the canoes that were about the ship, and put a stop to the coming off of others. As soon as the captain saw some of them retreating, and the rest quiet, he ordered the firing to cease, hoping that they would now be unwilling to renew the contest. In this, however, he was unhappily mistaken; a great number of the canoes that had been dispersed, soon drew together again, and lay some time on their paddles, looking at the ship from the distance of about a quarter of a mile, and then suddenly hoisting white streamers, pulled toward's the ship's stern, and began again to throw stones, with great force and dexterity, by the help of slings, from a considerable distance; each of these stones weighed about two pounds, and many of them wounded the people on board, who would have suffered much more, if an awning had not been spread over the whole deck to keep out the sun, and the hammocks placed in the nettings. At the same time several canoes well manned, were making towards the ship's bow, having probably taken notice that no shot had been fired from this part; the captain therefore ordered some guns forward, to be well pointed and fired at these canoes; at the same time running out two guns abaft, and pointing them well at the canoes that were making the attack. Among the canoes that were coming toward the bow, there was one which appeared to have some chief on board, as it was by signals made from her that the others had been called together; it happened that a shot, fired from the guns forward, hit this canoe so full as to cut it asunder. As soon as this was observed by the rest, they dispersed with such haste that in half an hour there was not a single canoe to be seen; the people also who had

crouded the shore, immediately fled over the hills with the utmost precipitation.

Having now no reason to fear any further interruption, they warped the ship up the harbour, and by noon, they were not more than half a mile from the upper part of the bay, within less than two cables' length of a fine river, and about two and a half of the reef. They had here nine fathom water, and close to the shore there were five. They moored the ship, and carried out the stream anchor, with the two shroud hausers, for a spring, to keep the ship's broadside abreast of the river; they also got up and mounted the eight guns which had been put into the hold. As soon as this was done, the boats were employed in sounding all around the bay, and in examining the shore where any of the inhabitants appeared, in order to discover whether it was probable that they would give them any farther disturbance. All the afternoon, and part of the next morning, was spent in this service; and about noon, the master returned, with a tolerable survey of the place, and reported, that there were no canoes in sight; that there was good landing on every part of the beach; that there was nothing in the bay from which danger could be apprehended, except the reef, and some rocks at the upper end, which appeared above water; and that the river, though it emptied itself on the other side of the point, was fresh water.

Soon after the captain sent Mr. Furneaux again, with all the boats manned and armed, the marines being also put on board, with orders to land opposite to their station, and secure himself, under cover of the boats and the ship, in the clearest ground he could find. About two o'clock the boats landed without any opposition,







*Queen of Oahootie, surrendering  
the Oahootie to Capt Wallis.*

and Mr. Furneaux stuck up a staff, upon which he hoisted a pendant, turned a turf, and took possession of the island in his Majesty's name, in honour of whom he called it King George the Third's Island; he then went to the river, and tasted the water, which he found excellent, and mixing some of it with rum, every man drank his Majesty's health. While he was at the river, which was about twelve yards wide, and fordable, he saw two old men on the opposite side of it, who perceiving that they were discovered, put themselves in a supplicatory posture, and seemed to be in great terror and confusion. Mr. Furneaux made signs that they should come over the river, and one of them complied. When he landed, he came forward, creeping upon his hands and knees, but Mr. Furneaux raised him up, and while he stood trembling, shewed him some of the stones that were thrown at the ship, and endeavoured to make him apprehend that if the natives attempted no mischief against them, they should do no harm to them. He ordered two of the water casks to be filled, to shew the Indian that he wanted water, and produced some hatchets, and other things, to intimate that he wished to trade for provisions. The old man, during this pantomimical conversation, in some degree recovered his spirits; and Mr. Furneaux, to confirm his professions of friendship, gave him a hatchet, some nails, beads, and other trifles; after which he re-embarked on board the boats, and left the pendant flying. As soon as the boats were put off, the old man went up to the pendant, and danced round it a considerable time; he then retired but soon after returned with some green boughs, which he threw down, and retired a second time; it was not long, however, before he appeared again, with about a

dozen of the inhabitants, and putting themselves in a sup-  
plicating posture, they all approached the pendant in a  
slow pace, but the wind happening to move it, when  
they were got close to it, they suddenly retreated with  
the greatest precipitation. After standing some time at  
a distance, and gazing at it, they went away, but in a  
short time came back, with two large hogs alive, which  
they laid down at the foot of the staff, and at length, tak-  
ing courage, they began to dance. When they had  
performed this ceremony, they brought the hogs down  
to the water-side, launched a canoe, and put them on  
board. The old man, who had a large white beard,  
then embarked with them alone, and brought them to  
the ship, when he came along side he made a set speech,  
and afterwards handed in several green plantain leaves,  
one by one, uttering a sentence, in a solemn slow tone,  
with each of them as he delivered it; after this he sent  
on board the two hogs, and then turning round, pointed  
to the land. Captain Wallis ordered some presents to  
be given him, but he would accept of nothing; and  
soon after put off his canoe, and went on shore.

At night, soon after it was dark, they heard the sound  
of many drums, with conchs, and other wind instru-  
ments, and saw a multitude of lights all along the coast.  
At six in the morning of the 26th, seeing none of the na-  
tives on shore, and observing that the pendant was  
taken away, Captain Wallis ordered the lieutenant to  
take a guard on shore, and if all was well, to send off,  
that they might begin watering; in a short time the cap-  
tain had the satisfaction to find that he had sent off for  
water casks, and by eight o'clock they had four tons  
of water on board. While they were employed in fill-  
ing the casks, several of the natives appeared on the op-



posite side of the river, with the old man whom the officer had seen the day before ; and soon after he came over, and brought with him a little fruit, and a few fowls, which were also sent off to the ship. At this time, having been very ill for near a fortnight, the captain was so weak that he could scarcely crawl about ; however, he employed his glasses to see what was doing on shore. At near half an hour after eight o'clock he perceived a multitude of the natives coming over a hill at about the distance of a mile, and at the same time a great number of canoes making round the western point, and keeping close along the shore. He then looked at the watering place, and saw at the back of it, where it was clear, a very numerous party of the natives creeping along behind the bushes ; he saw also many thousands in the woods, pushing along towards the watering places, and canoes coming very fast round the other point of the bay to the eastward. Being alarmed at these appearances, he dispatched a boat, to acquaint the officer on shore with what he had seen, and ordered him immediately to come on board with his men and leave the casks behind him ; he had, however, discovered his danger, and embarked before the boat reached him. Having perceived the Indians that were creeping towards him under shelter of the wood, he immediately dispatched the old man to them, making signs that they should keep at a distance, and that he wanted nothing but water. As soon as they perceived that they were discovered, they began to shout, and advanced with greater speed. The officer immediately repaired to the boats with his people, and the Indians, in the mean time having crossed the river, took possession of the water casks, with great appearance of exultation



and joy. The canoes now pulled along the shore, towards the place, with the utmost expedition, all the people on land keeping pace with them, except a multitude of women and children, who seated themselves upon a hill which overlooked the bay and the beach. The canoes from each point of the bay, as they drew nearer to that part of it where the ship was at anchor, put on shore, and took in more men, who had great bags in their hands, which afterwards appeared to be filled with stones. All the canoes that had come round the points, and many others that had put off from the shore within the bay, now made towards the ship, so that the captain had no doubt but that they intended to try their fortune in a second attack. As to shorten the contest would certainly lessen the mischief, he determined to make this action decisive, and put an end to hostilities at once; he therefore ordered the people, who were all at their quarters, to fire first upon the canoes which were drawn together in groups: this was immediately done so effectually, that those which were to the westward made towards the shore as fast as possible, and those to the eastward, getting round the reef, were soon beyond the reach of the guns. He then directed them to fire into the wood in different parts, which soon drove the Indians out of it, who ran up the hill where the women and children had seated themselves to see the battle. Upon this hill there were now several thousands who thought themselves in perfect security; but to convince them of the contrary, and hoping that when they saw the shot fall much farther than they could think possible, they would suppose it could reach them at any distance, he ordered some of the guns to be let down as low as they would admit, and fired four shots towards them.

Two of the balls fell close by a tree where a great number of these people were sitting, and struck them with such terror and consternation, that in less than two minutes not one of them was to be seen. Having thus cleared the coast, he manned and armed the boats, and putting a strong guard on board, he sent all the carpenters with their axes, and ordered them to destroy every canoe that had been run ashore. Before noon, this service was effectually performed, and more than fifty canoes, many of which were sixty feet long, and three broad, and lashed together, were cut to pieces. Nothing was found in them but stones and slings, except a little fruit, and a few fowls and hogs, which were on board two or three canoes of a much smaller size.

At two o'clock in the afternoon, about ten of the natives came out of the wood with green boughs in their hands, which they stuck up near the water side, and retired. After a short time they appeared again, and brought with them several hogs, with their legs tied, which they placed near the green boughs, and retired a second time. After this they brought down several more hogs, and some dogs, with their fore legs tied over their heads, and going again into the woods, brought back several bundles of the cloth which they use for apparel, and which had some resemblance to Indian paper. These they placed upon the beach, and called to the people on board to fetch them away. As they were at the distance of about three cables length, they could not then perfectly discover of what this peace-offering consisted; they guessed at the hogs and the cloth, but seeing the dogs, with their fore-legs appearing over the hinder part of the neck, rise up several times, and run a little way in an erect posture, they took them for some

strange unknown animals, and were very impatient to have a nearer view of them. The boat was therefore sent on shore with all expedition, and their wonder was soon at an end. They found nine good hogs, besides the dogs and the cloth; the hogs were brought off, but the dogs were turned loose, and with the cloth left behind. In return for the hogs, they left upon the shore some hatchets, nails, and other things, making signs to some of the Indians who were in sight, to take them away with their cloth. Soon after the boat had come on board, the Indians brought down two more hogs, and called them to fetch them; the boats therefore returned, and fetched off the two hogs, but still left the cloth, though the Indians made signs that they should take it. As they had not touched any of the things which they had left upon the beach for them, and it having been suggested that they would not take their offering because they had not accepted their cloth, the captain gave orders that it should be fetched away. The event proved that the conjecture was true, for the moment the boat had taken the cloth on board, the Indians came down, and with every possible demonstration of joy, carried away all that had been sent them into the wood. Their boats then went to the watering place, and filled and brought off all the casks, to the amount of about six tons. They found that they had suffered no injury while they had been in the possession of the Indians, but some leathern buckets and funnels which had been taken away with the casks, were not returned.

The next morning the captain sent the boats on shore, with a guard, to fill some more casks with water, and soon after the people were on shore, the same old man, who had come over the river to them the first day, came

again to the farther side of it, where he made a long speech, and then crossed the water. When he came up to the waterers, the officer shewed him the stones that were piled up like cannon balls upon the shore, and had been brought thither since their first landing, and some of the bags that had been taken out of the canoes, which the captain had ordered to be destroyed, filled with stones, and endeavoured to make him understand that the Indians had been the aggressors, and that the mischief that had been done them was in their own defence. The old man seemed to apprehend his meaning, but not to admit it; he immediately made a speech to the people, pointing to the stones, slings, and bags, with great emotion, and sometimes his looks, gestures, and voice was so furious as to be frightful. His passions, however, subsided by degrees, and the officer, who to his great regret could not understand one word of all that he had said, endeavoured to convince him, by all the signs he could devise, that they wished to live in friendship with them, and were disposed to shew them every mark of kindness in their power. He then shook hands with him, and embraced him, giving him at the same time several of such trinkets as he thought would be most acceptable. He contrived also to make the old man understand that they wished to traffic for provisions, that the Indians should not come down in great numbers, and that they should keep on one side of the river, and they on the other. After this the old man went away with great appearance of satisfaction, and before noon a trade was established, which furnished them with hogs, fowls, and fruit in great abundance, so that all the ship's company, whether sick or well, had as much as they could use.

Matters having been thus happily settled, the captain sent the surgeon, with the second lieutenant, to examine the country, and fix upon some place where the sick might take up their residence on shore. When they returned, they said, that with respect to health and convenience, all the places they had seen upon the island seemed to be equally proper; but that with respect to safety, they could recommend none but the watering-place, as they would be there under the protection of the ship and the guard, and would easily be prevented from straggling into the country and brought off to their meals. To the watering place therefore they were sent, with those that were employed in filling the casks, and appointed the gunner to command the party that was to be their guard. A tent was erected for them as a shelter both from the sun and the rain, and the surgeon was sent to superintend their conduct, and give his advice if it should be wanted. It happened that walking out with his gun, after he had seen the sick properly disposed of in the tent, a wild duck flew over his head, which he shot, and it fell dead among some of the natives who were on the other side of the river. This threw them into a panic, and they all ran away; when they got to some distance they stopped, and he made signs to them to bring the duck over; this one of them at last ventured to do, and, pale and trembling, laid it down at his feet. Several other ducks happening at the instant to fly over the spot where they were standing, he fired again, and fortunately brought down three more. This incident gave the natives such a dread of a gun, that if a musquet was pointed at a thousand of them, they would all run away like a flock of sheep; and probably the ease with which they afterwards kept



at a distance, and their orderly behaviour in their traffic, was in a great measure owing to their having upon this occasion seen the instrument of which before they had only felt the effects.

As the captain foresaw that a private traffic would probably commence between such of his people as were on shore, and the natives, and that if it was left to their own caprice, perpetual quarrels and mischief would ensue, he ordered that all matters of traffic should be transacted by the gunner, on behalf of both parties, and directed him to see that no injury was done to the natives, either by violence or fraud, and by all possible means to attach the old man to his interest. This service he performed with great diligence and fidelity, nor did he neglect to complain of those who transgressed these orders, which was of infinite advantage to all parties; for as the first offenders were punished with a necessary severity, many irregularities, that would otherwise have produced the most disagreeable consequences, were prevented; they were also indebted for many advantages to the old man, whose caution kept their people perpetually upon their guard, and soon brought back those who straggled from the party. The natives would indeed some times pilfer, but by the terror of a gun, without using it, he always found means to make them bring back what was stolen. A fellow had one day the dexterity and address to cross the river unperceived, and steal a hatchet; the gunner, as soon as he had missed it, made the old man understand what had happened, and got his party ready, as if he would have gone into the woods after the thief; the old man, however, made signs that he would save him the trouble, and immediately setting off, returned in a very short time with the

hatchet. The gunner then insisted that the offender should be delivered up, and with this also the old man, though not without great reluctance, complied. When the fellow was brought down, the gunner knew him to be an old offender, and therefore sent him prisoner on board. Captain Wallis had no intention to punish him otherwise, than by the fear of punishment, and therefore, after great entreaty and intercession, he gave him his liberty, and sent him on shore. When the natives saw him return in safety, it is hard to say whether their astonishment or joy was greater; they received him with universal acclamations, and immediately carried him off into the woods; the next day, however, he returned, and as a propitiation to the gunner, he brought him a considerable quantity of bread-fruit, and a large hog, ready roasted.

At this time, the people on board were employed in caulking and painting the weather-work, over-hauling the rigging, stowing the hold, and doing other necessary business; but the captain's disorder, which was a bilious cholic, increased so much, that he was obliged to take to his bed; his first lieutenant also still continued very ill, and the purser was incapable of his duty. The whole command devolved upon Mr. Furneaux, the second lieutenant, to whom he gave general directions, and recommended a particular attention to the people on shore. He also ordered that fruit and fresh provisions should be served to the ship's company as long as they could be procured, and that the boats should never be absent from the ship after sun-set. These directions were fulfilled with such prudence and punctuality, that during all his sickness, he was not trou-

bled with any business, nor had the mortification to hear a single complaint or appeal. The men were constantly served with fresh pork, fowls, and fruit, in such plenty, that when he left his bed, after having been confined to it near a fortnight, his ship's company looked so fresh and healthy, that he could scarcely believe them to be the same people.

On the 29th, one of the gunner's party found a piece of saltpetre near as big as an egg. As this was an object of equal curiosity and importance, diligent enquiry was immediately made from whence it came. The surgeon asked every one of the people on shore, separately, whether he had brought it from the ship; every one on board also was asked whether he had carried it on shore, but all declared that they had never had such a thing in their possession. Application was then made to the natives, but the meaning of both parties was so imperfectly conveyed by signs, that nothing could be learnt of them about it; during their whole stay here, however, they saw no more than this one piece.

On the 2d of July, the old man being absent, the supply of fresh provisions and fruit fell short; they had, however, enough to serve most of the messes, reserving plenty for the sick and convalescent.

The next day they heeled the ship, and about noon they caught a very large shark, and when the boats went to fetch the people on board to dinner, they sent it on shore. When the boats were putting off again, the gunner seeing some of the natives on the other side of the river, beckoned them to come over; they immediately complied, and he gave them the shark, which they soon cut to pieces, and carried away with great appearance of satisfaction.

On the 5th the old man returned to the market-tent, and made the gunner understand that he had been up the country, to prevail upon the people to bring down their hogs, poultry, and fruit, of which the parts near the watering-place were now nearly exhausted. The good effects of his expedition soon appeared, for several Indians, whom their people had never seen before, came in with some hogs that were larger than any that had been yet brought to market. In the mean time, the old man ventured off in his canoe, to the ship, and brought with him as a present to the captain, a hog ready roasted. He was much pleased with his attention and liberality, and gave him, in return for this hog, an iron pot, a looking-glass, a drinking-glass, and several other things, which no man in the island was in possession of but himself.

While the English were on shore, several young women were permitted to cross the river, who, though they were not averse to the granting of personal favours, knew the value of them too well not to stipulate for a consideration; the price, indeed, was not great, yet it was such as the sailors were not always able to pay, and under this temptation they stole nails and other iron from the ship. The nails that were brought for traffic, were not always in their reach, and therefore they drew several out of different parts of the vessel, particularly those that fastened the cleats to the ship's side. This was productive of a double mischief; damage to the ship, and a considerable rise at market. When the gunner offered, as usual, small nails for hogs of a middling size, the natives refused to take them, and produced large spikes, intimating that they expected such nails as these. A most diligent inquiry was set on foot

to discover the offenders, but all to no purpose ; and though a large reward was offered to procure intelligence, none was obtained. Captain Wallis was mortified at the disappointment, but he was still more mortified at a fraud which he found some of his people had practised upon the natives. When no nails were to be procured, they had stolen lead, and cut it up in the shape of nails. Many of the natives who had been paid with this base money, brought their leaden nails, with great simplicity, to the gunner, and requested him to give them iron in their stead. With this request, however reasonable, he could not comply, because, by rendering lead current, it would have encouraged the stealing it, and the market would have been as effectually spoiled by those who could not procure nails, as by those who could ; it was therefore necessary, upon every account, to render this leaden currency of no value.

On the 7th the captain sent one of the mates, with thirty men, to a village at a little distance from the market, hoping that refreshments might there be bought at the original price ; but here they were obliged to give still more than at the water side.

The next day a party was sent up the country to cut wood, and they met with some of the natives, who treated them with great kindness and hospitality. Several of these friendly Indians came on board of their boat, and seemed, both by their dress and behaviour, to be of a superio rank. To these people the captain paid a particular attention, and to discover what present would most gratify them, he laid down before them a Johannes, a guinea, a crown piece, a Spanish dollar, a few shillings, some new halfpence, and two large nails, making signs that they should take what they liked best. The



nails were first seized, with great eagerness, and then a few of the half-pence, but the silver and gold lay neglected. Having presented them, therefore, with some nails and half-pence, he sent them on shore superlatively happy.

On the 11th, in the afternoon, the gunner came on board with a tall woman, who seemed to be about five and forty years of age, of a pleasing countenance and majestic deportment. He said that she was but just come into that part of the country, and that seeing great respect paid her by the rest of the natives, he made her some presents; in return for which she had invited him to her house, which was about two miles up the valley, and gave him some large hogs; after which she returned with him to the watering place, and expressed a desire to go on board the ship, in which he had thought it proper, on all accounts, that she should be gratified. She seemed to be under no restraint, either from diffidence or fear, when she first came into the ship; and she behaved, all the while she was on board, with an easy freedom, that always distinguishes conscious superiority and habitual command. Captain Wallis gave her a large blue mantle, that reached from her shoulders to her feet, which he threw over her, and tied on with ribbons; he gave her also a looking-glass, beads of several sorts, and many other things, which she accepted with a very good grace, and much pleasure. When she intimated an inclination to return, the gunner was ordered to go with her, who, having set her on shore, attended her to her habitation, which she described as being very large and well built. He said, that in this house she had many guards and domestics, and that she had another at a little distance, which was enclosed in lattice work.



*The Queen of Sheba, receiving Presents from Capt. Wallis.*







*Captain Wallis attacked by the Indians.*





The next morning Captain W. went on shore for the first time; and this princess, or rather queen, for such by her authority she seemed to be, soon after came to him, followed by many of her attendants. As she perceived that his disorder had left him very weak, she ordered her people to take him in their arms, and carry him not only over the river, but all the way to her house; and observing that some of the people who were with him, particularly the first-lieutenant and purser, had also been sick, she caused them also to be carried in the same manner, and a guard, which the captain had ordered out upon the occasion, followed. In their way, a vast multitude crowded about them, but upon her waving her hand, without speaking a word, they withdrew, and left them a free passage. When they approached near her house, a great number of both sexes came out to meet her; these she presented to the captain, after having intimated by signs that they were her relations, and taking hold of his hand, she made them kiss it. They then entered the house, which covered a piece of ground 327 feet long, and 42 feet broad. It consisted of a roof, thatched with palm leaves, and raised upon 39 pillars on each side, and 14 in the middle. The ridge of the thatch, on the inside, was 30 feet high, and the sides of the house, to the edge of the roof, was 12 feet high; all below the roof being open. As soon as they entered she made them sit down, and then calling four young girls, she assisted them to take off his shoes, draw down his stockings, and pull off his coat, and then directed them to smooth down the skin, and gently chafe it with their hands; the same operation was also performed upon the first lieutenant and purser, but upon none of those who appeared to be in health.

While this was doing, the surgeon, who had walked till he was very warm, took off his wig to cool and refresh himself; a sudden exclamation of one of the Indians who saw it, drew the attention of the rest, and in a moment every eye was fixed upon the prodigy, and every operation was suspended; the whole assembly stood some time motionless, in silent astonishment, which could not have been more strongly expressed if they had discovered that our friend's limbs had been screwed on to the trunk; in a short time, however, the young women who were chafing them, resumed their employment, and having continued it for about half an hour, they dressed them again, but in this they were, as may easily be imagined, very awkward; the captain found great benefit, however, from chafing, and so did the lieutenant and purser. After a little time, their benefactress ordered some bales of Indian cloth to be brought out, with which she clothed the captain, and all that were with him, according to the fashion of the country. At first he declined the acceptance of this favour, but being unwilling not to seem pleased with what was intended to please him, he acquiesced. When they went away, she ordered a very large sow, big with young, to be taken down to the boat, and accompanied them thither herself. She had given directions to her people to carry the captain, as they had done when he came, but as he chose rather to walk, she took him by the arm, and whenever they came to a splash of water or dirt, she lifted him over with as little trouble as it would have cost him to have lifted over a child if he had been well.

The next morning captain Wallis sent her by the gunner, six hatchets, six bill hooks, and several other things; and when he returned, he said that he found her giving an entertainment to a great number of peo-

ple, which, he supposed, could not be less than a thousand. The messes were all brought to her by servants that prepared them, the meat being put into the shells of cocoa nuts, and the shells into wooden trays, somewhat like those used by our butchers, and she distributed them with her own hands to the guests, who were seated in rows round the great house. When this was done, she sat herself down upon a place somewhat elevated above the rest, and two women, placing themselves one on each side of her, fed her, she opening her mouth as they brought their hands up with the food. When she saw the gunner, she ordered a mess for him ; he could not certainly tell what it was, but he believed it to be fowl picked small, with apples cut among it, and seasoned with salt water ; it was, however, very well tasted. She accepted the things that the captain sent her, and seemed to be much pleased with them. After this correspondence was established with the queen, provisions of every kind became much more plenty at market ; but though fowls and hogs were every day brought in, they were still obliged to pay more for them than at the first, the market having been spoiled by the nails which their men had stolen and given to the women ; the captain therefore gave orders that every man should be searched before he went on shore, and that no woman should be suffered to cross the river.

On the 14th the gunner being on shore to trade, perceived an old woman on the other side of the river, weeping bitterly ; when she saw that she had drawn his attention upon her, she sent a young man, who stood by her, over the river to him, with a branch of the plantain-tree in his hand. When he came up, he made a long

speech, and then laid down his bough at the gunner's feet ; after this he went back and brought over the old woman, another man at the same time bringing over two large fat hogs. The woman looked round with great attention, fixing her eyes sometimes upon one, and sometimes upon another, and at last burst into tears. The young man who brought her over the river, perceiving the gunner's concern and astonishment, made another speech, longer than the first ; still, however, the woman's distress was a mystery ; but at length she made him understand that her husband, and three of her sons, had been killed in the attack of the ship. During this explanation, she was so affected, that at last she sunk down unable to speak, and the two young men, who endeavoured to support her, appeared to be nearly in the same condition ; they were probably two more of her sons, or some very near relations. The gunner did all in his power to sooth and comfort her, and when she had in some measure recovered her recollection, she ordered the two hogs to be delivered to him, and gave him her hand in token of friendship, but would accept nothing in return, though he offered her ten times as much as would have purchased the hogs at market.

The next morning the second lieutenant was sent with all the boats, and sixty men, to the westward to look at the country, and try what was to be got. About noon he returned, having marched along the shore near six miles. He found the country very pleasant and populous, and abounding as well with hogs and fowls, as fruit, and other vegetables of various kinds. The inhabitants offered him no molestation, but did not seem willing to part with any of the provisions which were most desirable ; they gave them, however, a few cocoa nuts and plantains, and at length sold them nine hogs and a

few fowls. The lieutenant was of opinion that they might be brought to trade freely by degrees, but the distance from the ship was so great, that too many men would be necessary for a guard. He saw a great number of very large canoes upon the beach, and some that were building. He observed that all their tools were made of stone, shells, and bone, and very justly inferred, that they had no metal of any kind. He found no quadrupeds among them, besides hogs and dogs, nor any earthen vessel, so that all their food is either baked or roasted. Having no vessel in which water could be subjected to the action of fire, they had no more idea that it could be made hot, than that it could be made solid. As the queen was one morning at breakfast on board the ship, one of her attendants, a man of some note, and one of those that they thought were priests, saw the surgeon fill the tea-pot by turning the cock of an urn that stood upon the table; having remarked this with great curiosity and attention, he presently turned the cock, and received the water upon his hand; as soon as he felt himself scalded, he roared out, and began to dance about the cabin with the most extravagant and ridiculous expressions of pain and astonishment; the other Indians, not being able to conceive what was the matter with him, stood staring at him in amaze, and not without some mixture of terror. The surgeon, however, who had innocently been the cause of the mischief, applied a remedy, though it was some time before the poor fellow was easy.

In the afternoon of the 18th, the queen came on board, with a present of two large hogs, for she never condescended to barter, and in the evening she returned on shore.



She repeated her visit on the 21st, and brought several large hogs as a present, for which, as usual, she would accept of no return. When she was about to leave the ship, she expressed a desire that the captain should go on shore with her, to which he consented, taking several of the officers with him. When they arrived at her house, she made them all sit down, and taking off the captain's hat, she tied to it a bunch or tuft of feathers of various colours, such as he had seen no person on shore wear but herself, which produced by no means a disagreeable effect. She also tied round his hat, and the hats of those who were with him, wreathes of braided or plaited hair, and gave them to understand, that both the hair and workmanship were her own; she also presented them with some mats, that were very curiously wrought. In the evening she accompanied them back to the beach, and when they were getting into the boat, she put on board a fine large sow big with young, and a great quantity of fruit. As they were parting, the captain made signs that he should quit the island in seven days: she immediately comprehended his meaning, and made signs that he should stay twenty days; that he should go two days journey into the country, stay there a few days, bring down plenty of hogs and poultry, and after that leave the island. Captain Wallis again made signs that he must go in seven days; upon which she burst into tears, and it was not without great difficulty that she was pacified.

The next morning the gunner sent off no less than twenty hogs, with great plenty of fruit. Their decks were now quite full of hogs and poultry, of which they killed only the small ones, and kept the others for sea stores; they found, however, to their great mortification, that neither the fowls nor the hogs could, without

great difficulty, be brought to eat any thing but fruit, which made it necessary to kill them faster than they should otherwise have done.

On the next day (24) the captain sent the old man, who had been of great service to the gunner at the market-tent, another iron-pot, some hatchets and bills, and a piece of cloth. He also sent the queen two turkies, two geese, three guinea hens, a cat big with kitten, some china, looking-glasses, glass bottles, shirts, needles, thread, cloth, ribbons, peas, some small white kidney beans, called callivances, and about sixteen different sorts of garden seeds, and a shovel, besides a considerable quantity of cutlery wares, consisting of knives, scissors, bill hooks, and other things. They had already planted several sorts of the garden seeds, and some peas in several places, and had the pleasure to see them come up in a very flourishing state\*. He sent her also two iron pots, and a few spoons. In return for these things, the gunner brought off eighteen hogs, and some fruit.

On the 25th Mr. Gore, one of the mates, with all the marines, forty seamen, and four midshipmen were ordered to go up the valley by the river as far as they could, and examine the soil and produce of the country, noting the trees and plants which they should find, and when they saw any stream from the mountains, to trace it to its source, and observe whether it was tinged with any mineral or ore. They were cautioned to keep continually upon their guard against the natives, and di-

---

\* There were, however, no remains of them when Captain Cook visited the island.

rected them to make a fire, as a signal, if they should be attacked. At the same time the captain took a guard on shore, and erected a tent on a point of land, to observe an eclipse of the sun, which, the morning being very clear, was done with great accuracy.

After the observation was taken, he went to the queen's house, and shewed her the telescope, which was a reflector. After she had admired its structure, he endeavoured to make her comprehend its use, and fixing it so as to command several distant objects, with which she was well acquainted, but which could not be distinguished with the naked eye, he made her look through it. As soon as she saw them she started back with astonishment, and directing her eye as the glass was pointed, stood some time motionless and silent; she then looked through the glass again, and again sought in vain, with the naked eye, for the objects which it discovered. As they by turns vanished and re-appeared, her countenance and gestures expressed a mixture of wonder and delight which no language can describe. When the glass was removed, the captain invited her, and several of the chiefs that were with her, to go with him on board the ship, in which he had a view to the security of the party that he had sent out; for he thought that while the queen, and the principal people were known to be in his power, nothing would be attempted against any person belonging to the ship on shore. When they got on board, he ordered a good dinner for their entertainment, but the queen would neither eat nor drink; the people that were with her eat very heartily of whatever was set before them, but would drink only plain water.

In the evening the mate and his companions returned from their excursion, and came down to the beach, upon which the captain put the queen and her attendants into the boats, and sent them on shore. As she was going over the ship's side, she asked, by signs, whether he still persisted in his resolution of leaving the island at the time he had fixed; and when he made her understand that it was impossible he should stay longer, she expressed her regret by a flood of tears, which for a while took away her speech. As soon as her passion subsided, she told him that she would come on board again the next day; and thus they parted.

At four o'clock the same morning, the mate had landed, with four midshipmen, a serjeant, and twelve marines, and twenty-four seamen, all armed, besides four, who carried hatchets and other articles of traffic, and four who were loaded with ammunition and provisions, the rest being left with the boat; every man had his day's allowance of brandy, and the hatchet men two small kegs, to give out when he should think proper.

As soon as he got on shore, he called upon the old man, and took him with them; they then followed the course of the river in two parties, one marching on each side. For the first two miles it flowed through a valley of considerable width, in which were many habitations, with gardens walled in, and abundance of hogs, poultry, and fruit; the soil seemed to be here a rich fat earth, and was of a blackish colour. After this the valley became very narrow, and the ground rising abruptly on one side of the river, they were all obliged to march on the other. Where the stream was precipitated from the hills, channels had been cut to lead the water into gardens and plantations of fruit trees; in these gardens

they found an herb which had never been brought down to the water side, and which they perceived the inhabitants eat raw. The mate tasted it and found it pleasant, its flavour somewhat resembling that of the West Indian spinnage, called Calleloor, though its leaf was very different. The ground was fenced off so as to make a very pretty appearance ; the bread fruit and apple trees were planted in rows on the declivity of the hills, and the cocoa nut and plantain, which require more moisture, on the level ground ; under the trees, both on the sides and at the foot of the hills, there was very good grass, but no underwood. As they advanced, the windings of the stream became innumerable, the hills on each side swelled into mountains, and vast crags every where projected over their heads. Travelling now became difficult, and when they proceeded about four miles, the road for the last mile having been very bad, they sat down to rest themselves, and take their breakfast ; they ranged themselves upon the ground under a large apple tree, in a very pleasant spot ; but just as they were about to begin their repast, they were suddenly alarmed by a confused sound of many voices, and a great shouting, and presently after saw a multitude of men, women, and children, upon the hill above them ; the old man seeing them rise hastily, and look to their arms, beckoned them to sit still, and immediately went up to the people that had surprised them. As soon as he joined them they were silent, and soon after disappeared ; in a short time, however, they returned, and brought with them a large hog ready roasted, with plenty of bread fruit, yams, and other refreshments, which they gave to the old man, who distributed them among the English. In return for this treat, the mate gave them some nails,



buttons, and others things, with which they were greatly delighted. After this they proceeded up the valley as far as they could, searching all the runs of water, and all the places where water had run, for appearances of metal or ore, but could find very little. The mate shewed all the people they met with, the piece of saltpetre which had been picked up in the island, and which he had taken with him for that purpose, but none of them took any notice of it, nor could he learn from them any thing about it. The old man began now to be weary, and there being a mountain before them he made signs that he would go home; before he left them however, he made the people who had so liberally supplied them with provisions, take the baggage, with the fruit that had not been eaten and some cocoa-nut shells full of fresh water, and made signs that they should follow the mate and his companions up the side of the mountain. As soon as he was gone, the Indians gathered green branches from the neighbouring trees, and with many ceremonies, the meaning of which was unknown, laid them down before them; after this they took some small berries with which they painted themselves red, and the bark of a tree that contained a yellowish juice, with which they stained their garments in different parts. The men began to climb the mountain while the old man was still in sight, and he, perceiving that they made their way with difficulty through the weeds and brushwood, which grew very thick, turned back, and said something to the natives in a firm loud tone; upon which twenty or thirty of the men went before them; and cleared them a very good path; they also refreshed them with water and fruit as they went along, and assisted them to climb the most difficult places, which they

should otherwise have found altogether impracticable. They began to ascend this hill at the distance of about six miles from the place where they landed, and reckoned the top of it to be near a mile above the river that runs through the valley below. When they arrived at the summit, they again sat down to rest and refresh themselves. While they were climbing they flattered themselves that from the top they should command the whole island, but they now saw mountains before them so much higher than their situation, that with respect to them they appeared to be in a valley; towards the ship indeed the view was enchanting; the sides of the hills were beautifully clothed with wood, villages were every where interspersed, and the vallies between them afforded a still richer prospect; the houses stood thicker, and the verdure was more luxuriant. They saw very few habitations above them, but discovered smoke in many places ascending from between the highest hills that were in sight, and therefore the mate conjectured that the most elevated parts of the country are by no means without inhabitants. As they ascended the mountain, they saw many springs gush from fissures on the side of it, and when they had reached the summit, they found many houses that they did not discover as they passed them. No part of these mountains is naked; the summits of the highest that they could see were crowned with wood, but of what kind the mate could not tell; those that were of the same height with that which they had climbed, were woody on the sides, but on the summit were rocky and covered with fern. Upon the flats that appeared below these, there grew a sedgy kind of grass and weeds; in general, the soil here, as well as in the valley, seemed to be rich. They saw several

bushes of sugar cane, which was very large and very good, growing wild, without the least culture. They likewise found ginger and turmeric, and brought samples of both, but could not procure seeds of any tree, most of them being in blossom. After traversing the top of this mountain to a good distance, they found a tree exactly like a fern, except that it was 14 or 15 feet high. This tree they cut down, and found the inside of it also like a fern. After having again recruited their strength by refreshment and rest, they began to descend the mountain, being still attended by the people to whose care they had been recommended by their old man. They kept their general direction towards the ship, but sometimes deviated a little to the right and left in the plains and vallies, when they saw any houses that were pleasantly situated, the inhabitants being every where ready to accommodate them with whatever they had. They saw no beast except a few hogs, nor any birds, except parrots, parroquets, and green doves; by the river, however, there was plenty of ducks, and every place that was planted and cultivated, appeared to flourish with great luxuriance, though in the midst of what had the appearance of barren ground. The mate planted the stones of peaches, cherries, and plums, with a great variety of garden seeds, where he thought it was most probable they would thrive, and limes, lemons, and oranges, in situations which resembled those in which they are found in the West Indies. In the afternoon they arrived at a very pleasant spot, within about three miles of the ship, where they procured two hogs and some fowls, which the natives dressed for them very well, and with great expedition. Here they continued till the cool of the evening, and then made the best of

their way for the ship, having liberally rewarded their guides, and the people who had provided them with so good a dinner.

About ten o'clock the next morning (26) the queen came on board according to her promise, with a present of hogs and fowls, but went on shore again soon afterwards. This day, the gunner sent off near thirty hogs, with great plenty of fowls and fruit. They completed their wood and water, and got all ready for sea. More inhabitants came down to the beach, from the inland country, than they had seen before, and many of them appeared, by the respect that was paid them, to be of a superior rank. About three o'clock in the afternoon, the queen came again down to the beach, very well dressed, and followed by a great number of people. Having crossed the river with her attendants and their old man, she came once more on board the ship. She brought with her some very fine fruit, and renewed her solicitation, that the captain would stay ten days longer, with great earnestness, intimating that she would go into the country and bring him plenty of hogs, fowls, and fruit. He endeavoured to express a proper sense of her kindness and bounty, but assured her that he should certainly sail the next morning. This, as usual, threw her into tears, and after she recovered, she enquired by signs, when he should return; Captain Wallis endeavoured to express fifty days, and she made signs for thirty; but the sign for fifty being constantly repeated, she seemed satisfied. She staid on board till night, and it was then with the greatest difficulty she could be prevailed upon to go on shore. When she was told that the boat was ready, she threw herself down upon the arm chest, and wept a long time with an excess of pas-

sion that could not be pacified; at last, however, though with the greatest reluctance, she went into the boat, and was followed by her attendants and the old man. The old man had often intimated that his son, a lad about fourteen years of age, should go with them, and the boy seemed to be willing; he had, however, now disappeared for two days; Capt. Wallis enquired after him when he first missed him, and the old man gave him to understand that he was gone into the country to see his friends, and would return time enough to go with them; but he had reason to think that, when the time drew near, the father's courage failed, and that to keep his child he secreted him till the ship was gone, for they never saw him afterwards.

At break of day, on the 27th, they unmoored, and at the same time the captain sent the barge and cutter to fill the few water casks that were now empty. When they came near the shore, they saw, to their great surprise, the whole beach covered with inhabitants, and having some doubt whether it would be prudent to venture themselves among such a multitude, they were about to pull back again for the ship. As soon as this was perceived from the shore, the queen came forward, and beckoned them; at the same time guessing the reason of what had happened, she made the natives retire to the other side of the river; the boats then proceeded to the shore, and filled the casks; in the mean time she put some hogs and fruit on board, and when they were putting off would fain have returned with them to the ship. The officer, however, who had received orders not to bring off any of the natives, would not permit her; upon which she presently launched a double canoe, and was rowed off by her own people. Her canoe was im-



mediately followed by fifteen or sixteen more, and all of them came to the ship. The queen came on board, but not being able to speak, she sat down and gave vent to her passion by weeping. After she had been on board about an hour, a breeze springing up, they weighed anchor and made sail. Finding it now necessary to return into her canoe, she embraced them all in the most affectionate manner, and with many tears; all her attendants also expressed great sorrow at their departure. Soon after it fell calm, and the boats were sent ahead to tow, upon which all the canoes returned to the ship, and that which had the queen on board came up to the gun room port, where her people made it fast. In a few minutes she came into the bow of her canoe, where she sat weeping with inconsolable sorrow. The captain gave her many things which he thought would be of great use to her, and some for ornament; she silently accepted of all, but took little notice of any thing. About ten o'clock they were got without the reef, and a fresh breeze springing up, their Indian friends, and particularly the queen, once more bade them farewell, with much tenderness of affection and grief\*. At noon, the harbour from which they sailed, bore S. E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. distant about twelve miles. It lies in latitude  $17^{\circ} 36'$  S. longitude  $150^{\circ}$  W. and Captain Wallis gave it the name of Port Royal Harbour.

---

\* For a particular account of the inhabitants of Otahete, their manners, arts, &c. the reader is referred to Capt. Cook's voyages.

### CHAP. III.

Passage from Otaheite to Tinian, with some Account of several other Island, discovered in the South Seas—Present State of Tinian—Passage to Batavia—Transactions there—Proceed to the Cape of Good Hope—And Return to England.

HAVING made sail from King George the Third's Island on the 27th, they proceeded along the shore of the Duke of York's Island, at the distance of about two miles. There appeared to be good bays in every part of it, and in the middle a fine harbour. The middle and west end is very mountainous, the east end is lower, and the coast, just within the beach, is covered with cocoa-nut, bread-fruit, apple, and plantain trees.

At day light the next morning, they saw land, for which they made sail, and ran along the lee side of it. On the weather side there were very great breakers, and the lee side was rocky, but in many places there appeared to be good anchorage. They saw but few inhabitants, and they appeared to live in a manner very different from those of King George's Island, their habitations being only small huts. They saw many cocoa-nut and other trees upon the shore; but all of them had their heads blown away, probably in a hurricane. This island is about six miles long, and has a mountain of considerable height in the middle, which seems to be fertile.

It lies in latitude  $17^{\circ} 28'$  S. and longitude, by their last observation,  $151^{\circ} 4'$  W. and the captain called it Sir Charles Saunders's Island.

On the 30th, at day break, they saw land bearing from N. by E. to N. W. They stood for it, but could find no anchorage, the whole island being surrounded by breakers. They saw smoke in two places, but no inhabitants. A few cocoa-nut trees were growing on the lee part of it. It is about ten miles long and four broad, and lies in latitude  $16^{\circ} 46'$  S. longitude, by observation,  $154^{\circ} 13'$  W. This the captain called Lord Howe's Island. In the afternoon they saw land bearing W. by N. and stood for it. At five o'clock they saw breakers running a great way to the southward, and soon after, low land to the S. W. and breakers all about it in every direction. They turned to windward all night, and as soon as it was light crowded sail to get round these shoals. At nine they got round them, and named them Sicily Islands. They are a group of islands or shoals extremely dangerous; for in the night, however clear the weather, and by day, if it be hazy, a ship may run upon them without seeing land. They lie in latitude  $16^{\circ} 28'$  S. longitude  $155^{\circ} 30'$  W.

They continued to steer their course westward, till day break on Thursday the 31st of August, when they saw land bearing W. by S. and hauled towards it. At eleven o'clock in the forenoon they saw more land in the W. S. W. At noon the first land that they saw, which proved to be an island, bore W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. distant about five leagues, and had the appearance of a sugar loaf; the middle of the other land, which was also an island, and appeared in a peak, bore W. S. W. distant six leagues. To the first, which is nearly circular, and

three miles over, Captain Wallis gave the name of Boscawen's Island ; and the other, which is three miles and a half long, and two broad, he called Keppel's Isle. At two o'clock, being about two miles distant from the former, they saw several of the inhabitants ; but Keppel's Isle being to windward, and appearing more likely to afford them anchorage, they hauled up for it. At six, it was not more than a mile and a half distant, and, with their glasses, they saw many of the inhabitants upon the beach ; but there being breakers at a considerable distance from the shore, they stood off and on all night.

At four o'clock the next morning they sent off the boats to sound, and visit the island ; and as soon as it was light, they ran down and lay over against the middle of it. At noon the boats returned, and reported that they had run within a cable's length of the island, but could find no ground : that seeing a reef of rocks lie off it, they had hauled round it, and got into a large deep bay which was full of rocks ; that they then sounded without the bay, and found anchorage from 14 to 20 fathom, with a bottom of sand and coral ; that afterwards they went again into the bay, and found a rivulet of good water, but the shore being rocky, went in search of a better landing-place, which they found about half a mile farther, and went ashore. They reported also, that from the water to this landing-place, a good rolling way might be made for supplying the ship, but that a strong guard would be necessary, to prevent molestation from the inhabitants. They saw no hogs, but brought off two fowls and some cocoa nuts, plantains, and bananas. While the boats were on shore, two canoes came up to them with six men ; they seemed to be peaceably inclined, and were much the same

kind of people as the inhabitants of King George's Island, but they were clothed in a kind of matting, and the first joint of their little fingers had been taken off; at the same time about fifty more came down from the country, to within about an hundred yards of them, but would advance no further. When they had made what observations they could, they put off, and three of the natives from the canoes came into one of the boats, but when she got about half a mile from the shore, they all suddenly jumped overboard, and swam back again.

From this account Captain Wallis considered that the watering here would be tedious, and attended with great fatigue; that it was now the depth of winter in the southern hemisphere, that the ship was leaky, that the rudder shook the stern very much, and that what other damage she might have received in her bottom could not be known. That for these reasons, she was very unfit for the bad weather which she would certainly meet with either in going round Cape Horn, or through the Streight of Magellan; that if she should get safely through the Streight, or round the Cape, it would be absolutely necessary for her to refresh in some port, but in that case no port would be in her reach; he therefore determined to make the best of his way to Tinian, Batavia, and so to Europe by the Cape of Good Hope. By this route, as far as they could judge, they should still save their lives, as from this place to Batavia they should probably have a calm sea, and be not far from a port.

In consequence of this resolution they bore away at noon, and passed Boscawen's Island without visiting it. It is a high round island, abounding in wood, and full of people; but Keppel's Isle is by far the largest and the



best of the two. They continued a W. N. W. course till ten o'clock in the morning of the 16th, when they saw land bearing N. by E. and hauled up for it. At noon they were within three leagues of it; the land within shore appeared to be high, but at the water side it was low, and had a pleasant appearance; the whole seemed to be surrounded by reefs, that ran two or three miles into the sea. As they sailed along the shore, which was covered with cocoa-nut trees, they saw a few huts, and smoke in several parts up the country. Soon after they hauled without a reef of rocks, to get round the lee side of the island, and at the same time sent out the boats to sound and examine the coast.

The boats rowed close along the shore, and found it rocky, with trees growing close down to the water side. These trees were of different sorts, many of them very large, but had no fruit; on the lee side, however, there were a few cocoa nuts, but not a single habitation was to be seen. They discovered several small rills of water, which, by clearing, might have been made to run in a larger stream. Soon after they had got close to the shore, several canoes came up to them, each having six or eight men on board. They appeared to be a robust active people, and were quite naked, except a kind of mat that was wrapped round their middle. They were armed with large maces or clubs, such as Hercules is represented with, two of which they sold to the master for a nail or two, and some trinkets. As the sailors had seen no animal, either bird or beast, except sea fowl, they were very desirous to learn of the natives whether they had either, but could not make themselves understood. It appears, that during this conference, a design was formed to seize their cutter, for one of the Indians

suddenly laid hold of her painter, and hauled her upon the rocks. The sailors endeavoured, in vain, to make them desist, till they fired a musquet across the nose of the man that was most active in the mischief. No hurt was done; but the fire and report so affrighted them, that they made off with great precipitation. Both their boats then put off, but the water had fallen so suddenly that they found it very difficult to get back to the ship; for when they came into deep water they found the point of rocks standing up, and the whole reef, except in one part, was now dry, and a great sea broke over it. The Indians probably perceived their distress, for they turned back, and followed them in their canoes all along the reef till they got to the breach, and then seeing them clear, and making way fast towards the ship, they returned. About six in the evening, it being then dark, the boats returned, and the master reported, that all within the reef was rocky, but that in two or three places, at about two cables's length without it, there was anchorage in 11, 14, and 12 fathem, upon sand and coral. The breach in the reef he found to be about 60 fathom broad, and here, if pressed by necessity, he said a ship might anchor or moor in 8 fathom; but that it could not be safe to moor with a greater length than half a cable.

When they hoisted the boats in they ran down 4 miles to leeward, where they lay till the morning; and then, finding that the current had them set out of sight of the island they made sail. The officers called this Wallis's Island, after their captain, it lies in latitude  $13^{\circ} 18' S.$  longitude  $177^{\circ} W.$  It was very remarkable, that although they found no kind of metal in any of these islands, yet the inhabitants of all of them, the moment they got a piece

of iron in their possession, began to sharpen it, but made no such attempt on brass or copper.

They continued to steer N. westerly, and many birds from time to time were seen about the ship, till the 28th, when her longitude being, by observation,  $187^{\circ} 34'$  W. they crossed the line into North latitude. Among the birds that came about the ship, one which they caught exactly resembled a dove in size, shape, and colour; it had red legs and was web-footed. They also saw several plantain leaves and cocoa nuts pass by the ship.

On the 29th, about two o'clock in the afternoon, they crossed a great rippling, which stretched from the N. E. to the S. W. as far as the eye could reach from the mast-head. They sounded, but had no bottom with a line of two hundred fathoms.

On the 3d of September, at five o'clock in the morning, they saw land bearing E. N. E. distant about five miles; in about half an hour they saw more land in the N. W. and at six, saw in the N. E. an Indian proa. Perceiving that she stood towards them, they hoisted Spanish colours: but when she came within about two miles of them she tacked, and stood from them to the N. N. W. and in a short time was out of sight. At eight o'clock, the islands which Captain Wallis judged to be two of Picadores, bore from S. W. by W. and to windward, from N. by E. to N. E. and had the appearance of small keys. They were distant about three leagues; but many others, much farther off, were in sight.

On the 18th they saw the island of Saypan, bearing W. by N. distant about ten leagues. In the afternoon they saw Tinian, and made sail for the road; where, at nine o'clock the next morning, they came to an anchor

in 22 fathom, sandy ground, at about half a mile distant from the shore, and half a mile from the reef.

When the ship was secured, the boats were sent on shore to erect tents, and bring off some refreshments ; and about noon they returned with some cocoa nuts, limes, and oranges. The tents were erected in the evening, and the captain sent the surgeon and all the invalids on shore, with two months provisions of every kind for forty men, the smith's forge, and a chest of carpenter's tools ; he then landed himself with the first lieutenant, both of them being in a very sickly condition, taking with them also a mate and twelve men, to go up the country and hunt for cattle. They returned at six in the evening, and brought in a fine young bull, of near four hundred weight ; part of it they kept on shore, and sent the rest on board with bread fruit, limes, and oranges.

Early on the 20th the carpenters were set at work to caulk the ship all over, and put every thing in repair as fast as possible. All the sails were also got on shore, and the sail-makers employed to mend them ; armourers at the same time were busy in repairing the iron work, and making new chains for the rudder. The number of people now on shore, sick and well, was fifty-three. In this place they got beef, pork, poultry, papaw apples, bread fruit, limes, and oranges. The sick began to recover from the day they first went on shore ; the air, however, was so different here from what they found it in King George's Island, that flesh meat, which there kept sweet two days, could here be scarcely kept sweet one. There had been many cocoa nut trees near the landing-place, but they had been all wastefully cut down for the fruit, and none having grown up in their

stead, they were forced to go three miles into the country before a single nut could be procured. The hunters also suffered incredible fatigue, for they were frequently obliged to go ten or twelve miles through one continued thicket, and the cattle were so wild that it was very difficult to come near them, so that the captain was obliged to relieve one party by another; and it being reported that cattle were more plenty at the north end of the island, but that the hunters being quite exhausted with fatigue when they got thither, were not able to kill them, much less to bring them down, Mr. Gore was sent with fourteen men, to establish themselves in that part of the island, and ordered that a boat should go every morning, at day break, to bring in what they should kill. In the mean time the ship was laid by the stern to get at some of the copper-sheathing which had been much torn; and in repairing the copper, the carpenter discovered and stopped a large leak under the lining of the knee of head, by which they had reason to hope most of the water that the vessel had lately admitted in bad weather, came in. During their stay here, all the people were ordered on shore by turns, and by the 15th of October, the sick being recovered, their wood and water completed, and the ship made fit for the sea, they got every thing off the shore, and embarked all their men from the watering-place, each having, at least five hundred limes, and there being several tubs full on the quarter deck, for every one to squeeze into his water as he should think fit. The next morning, at day-break, they weighed, and sailed out of the bay, sending the boats at the same time to the north end of the island, to bring off Mr. Gore and his hunters. At noon



they received them and their tents on board, with a fine large bull which they had just killed.

On the 23d, they had much thunder, lightning, and rain, with strong gales and a great sea. The ship laboured very much, and the rudder being loose again, shook the stern as much as ever. The next day they saw several land birds, and the gales continuing, they split the jib and main top-mast-stay-sail; the wind increased all the remainder of the day, and all night, and on the 25th it blew a storm. The fore-sail and mizen-sail were torn to pieces, and lost; and having bent others, they wore and stood under a reefed fore-sail, and balanced mizen. They had the mortification to find the ship admit more water than usual. They got the top-gallant masts down upon the deck, and took the gib-boom in; soon after which a sea struck the ship upon the bow, and washed away the round houses, with all the rails of the head, and every thing that was upon the fore-castle; they were, however, obliged to carry as much sail as the ship would bear, being very near the Bashee Islands, and not more than thirty leagues, with a lee-shore.

The next morning they saw several ducks and shags, some small land birds, and a great number of horse-flies about the ship; but had no ground with 160 fathom. The incessant and heavy rain had kept every man on board constantly wet to the skin for more than two days and two nights; the weather was still very dark, and the sea was continually breaking over the ship.

On the 27th, the darkness, rain, and tempest continuing, a mountainous sea that broke over them, staved all the half-ports to pieces on the starboard side, broke all the iron stanchions on the gunwale, washed the boat off

the skids, and carried many things overboard. They had, however, this day, a gleam of sunshine, sufficient to determine their latitude (which they found to be  $20^{\circ} 50'$  N.) and the ship appeared to be fifty minutes N. of her reckoning. The weather now became more moderate. At noon, the next day, they altered their course, steering S. by W.; and at half an hour after one, they saw the Bashee Islands bearing from S. by E. to S. S. E. distant about six leagues. These islands are all high, but the northermost is higher than the rest. At midnight, the weather being very dark, with sudden gusts of wind, they missed Edmund Morgan, a marine taylor, whom they supposed to have fallen overboard, having reason to fear that he had drunk more than his allowance.

From this time till the 3d of November, they found the ship every day from ten to fifteen miles north of her reckoning. The day before they had seen several gannets; but upon sounding many times, during the day and the next night, they had no ground with 150 fathom. This morning, at seven o'clock, they saw a ledge of breakers bearing S. W. at the distance of about three miles; they hauled off from them, and at eleven saw more breakers bearing S. W. by S. distant about five miles. At noon they hauled off the east end of them, from which they were not distant more than a quarter of a mile. They saw much foul ground to the S. and S. S. E. but had no bottom with 150 fathom. Before one, however, they saw shoal water on the larboard bow, and standing from it, passed another ledge at two. At three, they saw a low sandy point, which the Captain called Sandy Isle, bearing N.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. distant about two miles. At five they saw a small island, which he called Small Key, bearing N. by E. distant about five

miles; and soon after, another larger, which he called Long Island, beyond it. At six in the evening, the largest island being distant between two and three leagues, they brought to, and stood off and on from midnight till break of day, continually sounding, but having no ground.

At seven the next morning, they saw another island, which the captain called New Island, bearing S. E. by E. and a large reef of rocks bearing S.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. distant six miles, At ten they saw breakers from W. S. W. to W. by N.

On the 5th they found the ship, which had for some time been to the northward of her reckoning eight miles to the southward. They continued their course, often sounding, but finding no bottom. On the 7th they passed through several rippings of a current, and saw great quantities of drift-wood, cocoa-nut leaves, things like cones of firs, and weed which swam in a stream N. E. to S. W. They had now soundings at sixty-five fathom, with brown sand, small shells and stones; and at noon found the ship again to the northward of her reckoning ten miles, and had decreased their soundings to twenty-eight fathom, with the same ground. At two o'clock they saw the island of Condore, from the mast-head, bearing W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. At four they had ground with twenty fathom; the island bearing from W. to N. by W. distant about thirteen leagues, and having the appearance of high hummocks. The latitude of this island is  $8^{\circ} 40' N.$  longitude  $254^{\circ} 15'.$  They now altered their course, and on the 16th, at ten in the morning, they crossed the line again into South latitude, in longitude  $255^{\circ}$ ; and soon after they saw two islands, one bearing

S. by E. distant five leagues, and the other S. by W. distant seven leagues.

On the 17th the weather became very dark and tempestuous, with heavy rain ; they therefore clewed up, and lay by till they could see about them. The two islands proved to be Pulo Tote and Pulo Weste ; and having made sail till one o'clock they saw the Seven Islands. They continued their course till two the next morning, the weather being very dark, with heavy squalls of wind, and much lightning and rain. While one of these blasts was blowing with all its violence, and the darkness was so thick that they could not see from one part of the ship to the other, they suddenly discovered, by a flash of lightning, a large vessel close a-board of them. The steersman instantly put the helm a-lee, and the ship answering her rudder, they just cleared each other. This was the first ship they had seen since they parted with the Swallow ; and it blew so hard, that not being able to understand any thing that was said, they could not learn to what nation she belonged. At six, the weather cleared up, and they saw a sail at anchor in the E. S. E. at noon they saw land in the W. N. W. which proved to be Pulo Taya, Pulo Tote bearing S. 35° E. Pulo Weste S. 13° E. At six in the evening they anchored in 15 fathom, with sandy ground ; and observed a current running E. N. E. at the rate of five fathom an hour.

They weighed and made sail early on the 19th, and soon after saw two vessels ahead ; but at six in the evening, finding that they had lost much ground, they came again to an anchor in fifteen fathom, with a fine sandy bottom.

At six o'clock the next morning, the current being slack, they hove short on the small bower, which soon after parted at a third from the clench. They immediately took in the cable, and perceived that, although they had sounded with great care before they anchored, and found the bottom clear, it had been cut through by the rocks. After some time, the current becoming strong, a fresh gale springing up, and the ship being a great way to the leeward, they made sail, in hopes to get up and recover the anchor; but found at last that it was impossible, without anchoring again; and being afraid of the consequences of doing that in foul ground, they determined to stand on, especially as the weather was become squally. They were, however, able to make very little way till the next day, when about three in the afternoon, they saw Monopin Hill bearing S.  $\frac{3}{4}$  E. and advancing very little, saw the coast of Sumatra at half an hour after six on the 22d. They continued to suffer great delay by currents and calms, but on the 30th anchored in Batavia Road, where they found fourteen sail of Dutch East India ships, a great number of small vessels, and his Majesty's ship the Falmouth, lying upon the mud in a rotten condition.

Captain Wallis sent an officer on shore, to acquaint the governor of their arrival, to obtain his permission to purchase refreshments, and to tell him that he would salute him, if he would return an equal number of guns. The Governor readily agreed; and at sun-rise, on the 11th of December, the captain saluted him with thirteen guns, which he returned with fourteen from the fort. Soon after, the purser sent off some fresh beef, and plenty of vegetables, which were ordered to be served



immediately ; at the same time the captain called the ship's company together, and told them that he would not suffer any liquor to come on board, and would severely punish those who should attempt to bring any ; and he took some pains to reconcile them to this regulation, by assuring them that in this country intemperance would inevitably destroy them. As a further preservative he suffered not a man to go on shore, except those who were upon duty ; and took care than none even of these straggled into the town.

On the 2d the boatswain and the carpenter, with the carpenter of the Falmouth, were sent to look at such of her stores as had been landed at Onrust, with orders, that if any were fit for their use they should be bought. At their return they reported, that all the stores they had seen were rotten, and unfit for use, except one pair of tack which they brought with them ; the masts, yards, and cables were all dropping to pieces, and even the iron work was so rusty that it was worth nothing. They also went on board the Falmouth to examine her hulk, and found her in so shattered a condition, that in their opinion she could not be kept together during the next monsoon. Many of her ports were washed into one, the stern-post was quite decayed, and there was no place in her where a man could be sheltered from the weather. The few people who belonged to her were in as bad a state as their vessel, being quite broken and worn down, and expecting to be drowned as soon as the monsoon should set in.

The Dolphin's company had continued healthy and sober, and been served with fresh beef every day, from the time of their first coming to an anchor in the road ; they had also some beef, and a live ox, to carry

out with them. They had now only one man upon the sick list, except a seaman, who had been afflicted with the rheumatic pains ever since their leaving the Streight of Magellan; and at six o'clock in the morning of the 8th of December, after a stay of just one week, they set sail.

On the 11th, at noon, they were off a small island called the Cap, between the coast of Sumatra and Java, and several of their people fell down with colds and fluxes. The next day a Dutch boat came on board, and sold them some turtle, which was served to the ship's company. At night, being at the distance of about two miles from the Java shore, they saw an incredible number of lights upon the beach, which they supposed were intended to draw the fish near it, as they had seen the same appearance at other places.

On the 14th they anchored off Prince's Island, and began to take in wood and water. The next morning the natives came in with turtle, poultry, and hog deer, which they bought at a reasonable price. They continued here, fitting the ship for sea, till the 11th, during which time many of the people began to complain of intermitting disorders, something like an ague. At six o'clock the next morning, having completed their wood, and taken on board seventy-six tons of water, they made sail. While they lay here one of the seamen fell from the main-yard into the barge, which lay alongside the ship. His body was dreadfully bruised, and many of his bones were broken; it happened also, that in his fall he struck two other men, one of whom was so much hurt that he continued speechless till the 24th, and then died, though the other had only one of his toes broken. They had now no less than sixteen upon the

sick list, and by the 1st of January, the number was increased to forty; they had buried three, among whom was the quarter-master, George Lewes, who was a diligent sober man, and the more useful, as he spoke both the Spanish and Portuguese languages. The diseases by which they suffered, were fluxes, and fevers of the putrid kind, which are always contagious, and for that reason alone, would be more fatal on board a ship than any other. The surgeon's mate was very soon laid up, and those who were appointed to attend the sick, were always taken ill in a day or two after they had been upon that service. To remedy this evil, as much as possible, Captain Wallis, made a very large birth for the sick, by removing a great number of people from below to the half deck, which he hung with painted canvass, keeping it constantly clean, and directing it to be washed with vinegar, and fumigated once or twice a day. Their water was well tasted, and was kept constantly ventilated: a large piece of iron also, used for the melting of tar, and called a loggerhead, was heated red hot, and quenched in it before it was given out to be drank. The sick had also wine instead of grog, and salop or sago every morning for breakfast; two days in a week they had mutton broth, and had a fowl or two given them on the intermediate days; they had besides, plenty of rice and sugar, and frequently malt meshed; the surgeon also was indefatigable; yet, with all these advantages, the sickness gained ground. In the mean time, to aggravate their misfortune, the ship made more than three feet of water in a watch; and all her upper works were very open and loose. By the 10th, the sickness began to abate, but more than half the ship's

company were so feeble, that they could scarcely crawl about.

On the 24th they met with a violent gale, which split the main-top-sail and the main-top-mast-stay-sail all to pieces. The sea broke over the ship in a dreadful manner, the starboard rudder chain was broken, and many of the booms were washed overboard. During the storm they saw several birds and butterflies; and their first attention, after it subsided, was to dry the bedding of the sick; at the same time, every one on board, who could handle a needle, was employed in repairing the sails, which were now in a shattered condition.

At six in the evening of the 30th, they saw land, and on the 4th of February, anchored in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope. They found riding here a Dutch Commodore, with sixteen sail of Dutch East Indiamen, a French East India ship, and the Admiral Watson, Captain Griffin, an East India packet-boat, for Bengal.

Captain Wallis now sent an officer on shore, with the usual compliments to the Governor, who received him with great civility, telling him that they were welcome to all the refreshments and assistance that the Cape afforded, and that he would return their salute with the same number of guns. They saluted the Governor with thirteen guns, and he returned the same number; the Admiral Watson saluted them with eleven guns, and they returned nine; the French ship afterwards saluted them with nine guns, and they returned seven.

Having got off some mutton for the ship's company, with plenty of greens, the captain sent the surgeon on shore to hire quarters for the sick, but he could procure none for less than two shillings a day, and a stipulation to pay more, if any of them should take the small pox,

which was then in almost every house, in proportion to the malignity of the disease. The first expence being great, and it appearing, upon inquiry, that many of their people had never had the small-pox, so that the increase was likely to be considerable, besides the danger, the captain requested the Governor's permission to erect a tent upon a spacious plain, at about two miles distance from the town, called Green Point, and to send his people on shore thither during the day, under the care of an officer, to prevent their straggling. This permission the Governor immediately granted, and gave orders that they should suffer no molestation.

Here, therefore, Captain Wallis ordered tents to be erected, and the surgeon and his mate, with proper officers to attend; at the same time strictly charging that no man should be suffered to go into the town, and that no liquor should be brought to the tents. All the sick, except two, left the ship early in the morning, with their provisions and firing; and for those that were reduced to great weakness, he ordered the surgeon to procure such extraordinary provisions as he should think proper, particularly milk, though it was sold at an excessive price. About six in the evening they returned on board, and seemed to be greatly refreshed. At the same time, being extremely ill himself, the captain was obliged to be put on shore, and carried about eight miles up the country, where he continued all the time the ship lay here; and when she was ready to sail, returned on board without having received the least benefit.

No time, however, was lost in refitting the vessel; the sails were all unbent, the yards and top-masts struck, the forge was set up, the carpenters were employed in caulking, the sail-makers in mending the sails, the coo-



pers in repairing the casks, the people in overhauling the rigging, and the boats in filling water. The heavy work being nearly dispatched on the 10th, twenty of the men, who had had the small-pox, were permitted to go ashore at the town, and others, who were still liable to the distemper, were landed at some distance, with orders to go into the country, and return in the evening, which they punctually obeyed; this liberty, therefore, was continued to them all the while the vessel lay at this port, which produced so good an effect, that the ship's company, except the sick, who recovered very fast, had a more healthy and vigorous appearance than when they left England. They purchased here several necessaries (which they had endeavoured to procure at Batavia) at a reasonable price, besides canvas and other stores; they also procured fresh water by distillation, principally to shew the captains of the Indiamen, and their officers, that, upon an emergency, wholesome water might be procured at sea. At five o'clock in the morning, they put fifty-six gallons of salt water into the still, at seven it began to run, and in about five hours and a quarter afforded them 42 gallons of fresh water, at an expence of nine pounds of wood, and sixty nine pounds of coals. Thirteen gallons and two quarts remained in the still, and that which came off had no ill taste, nor, as they had often experienced, any hurtful quality. Captain Wallis thought the shewing this experiment of the more consequence, as the being able to allow plenty of water not only for drink, but for boiling any kind of provision, and even for making tea and coffee, especially during long voyages, and in hot climates, conduces greatly to health, and is the means of saving many lives. He never once put his people to an allow-

ance of water during this whole voyage, always using the still when they were reduced to 45 tons, and preserving the rain water with the utmost diligence. He did not, however, allow water to be fetched away at pleasure, but the officer of the watch had orders to give such as brought provisions of any kind, water sufficient to dress it, and a proper quantity also to such as brought tea and coffee.

On the 25th the wood and water being nearly completed, and the ship almost ready for sea, every body was ordered to go on board, and the sick tents to be brought off; the people being so well recovered, that in the whole ship's company there were but three men unable to do duty, and happily, since their leaving Batavia, they had lost but three. On the 27th the carpenters finished caulking all the outworks, the fore-castle, and the main-deck; they got all their bread on board from the shore, with a considerable quantity of straw, and thirty-four sheep for sea-stores. In the mean time Captain Wallis came on board, and having unmoored, lay waiting for a wind till the evening of March 3, when a breeze springing up, they got under sail.

At six o'clock in the evening of the 10th, they saw the island of St. Helena, at the distance of about fourteen leagues; and at one the next morning, brought to. At break of day they made sail for the island, and at nine, anchored in the bay. The fort saluted them with thirteen guns, and they returned the same number. They found riding here the Northumberland Indiaman, Captain Milford, who saluted them with eleven guns, and they returned nine. They got out all the boats as soon as possible, and sent the empty casks to be filled with water; at the same time several of the people were

employed to gather purslain, which grows here in plenty. About two o'clock Captain Wallis went on shore, and was saluted by the fort with thirteen guns, which he returned. The governor and the principal gentlemen of the island did him the honour to meet him at the water side, and having conducted him to the fort, told him that it was expected he should make it his home during his stay.

On the 18th, by noon, their water was completed, and the ship was made ready for sea; soon after, she was unmoored, to take advantage of the first breeze, and at five in the afternoon the captain returned on board. Upon his leaving the shore, he was saluted with thirteen guns, and soon after, upon getting under way, with thirteen more, both which he returned; the Northumberland Indiaman, and the Osterley, which arrived here the evening before he made sail, also saluted him with thirteen guns; which compliment he returned with the same number.

On the 21st, in the evening, they saw several men of war birds; and at midnight heard many birds about the ship. At five o'clock in the morning of the 23d, they saw the island of Ascension; and at eight discovered a ship to the eastward, who brought to, and hoisted a jack at her main-top-mast-head, upon which they shewed their colours, and she then stood in for the land again. They ran down close along the north-east side of the island, and looked into the bay, but seeing no ship there, and it blowing a stiff gale they made the best of their way. On the 28th they crossed the equator, and got again into north latitude.

On April 13, they passed a great quantity of gulph weed; and on the 17th passed a great deal more. On

the 19th they saw two flocks of birds, and observing the water to be discoloured, thought the ground might be reached, but, upon sounding, could find no bottom. At five o'clock in the morning of the 24th, they saw the peak of the island of Pico bearing N. N. E. at the distance of about 18 leagues.

No incident worth recording happened till about noon on the 21st, when being in latitude  $48^{\circ} 44' N.$  longitude  $7^{\circ} 16' W.$  they saw a ship in chase of a sloop, at which she fired several guns. They bore away, and at three, fired a gun at the chase, and brought her to; the ship to windward, being near the chase, immediately sent a boat on board her, and soon after, Captain Hammond, of his Majesty's sloop the *Savage*, came on board the *Dolphin*, and said, that the vessel he had chased, when he first saw her, was in company with an Irish wherry, and that as soon as they discovered him to be a man of war, they took different ways; the wherry hauled the wind, and the other vessel bore away. That he at first hauled the wind, and stood away after the wherry, but finding that he gained no ground, he bore away after the other vessel, which probably would also have escaped, if Captain Wallis had not stopped her, for that he gained very little ground in the chase. She appeared to be laden with tea, brandy and other goods, from Roscoe in France; and though she was steering a south-west course, pretended to be bound to Bergen in Norway. She belonged to Liverpool, was called the *Jenny*, and commanded by one Robert Christian. Her brandy and tea were in small kegs and bags; and all appearances being strongly against her, Captain Wallis detained her, in order to be sent to England.

At half an hour after five on the 13th of June, they saw the islands of Scilly; on the 19th the Captain landed at Hastings in Sussex; and at four the next morning, the ship anchored safely in the Downs, it being just 637 days since her weighing anchor in Plymouth Sound.

---

---

*End of Captain Wallis's Voyage.*

---

---



---

AN  
ACCOUNT  
OF A  
*VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD,*

By PHILIP CARTERET Esq.

Commander of his Majesty's Sloop the SWALLOW,

IN THE YEARS

1766, 1767, 1768, AND 1769,

*In Company with the Dolphin.*

---

THE

OF

THE

IN

THE

THE

THE

THE

---

# A VOYAGE, &c.

---

## CHAP. I.

---

They sail with the Dolphin—After many Dangers get into Island Bay—Separated from the Dolphin—Critical Situation—False Alarm—The Western Entrance of the Streight cleared—Passage from Cape Pillar to Masafuero—Disagreeable Weather—Critical Situations of the Boats, and of three of the Crew—Of the Cutter's Crew—Account of Masafuero.

**CAPTAIN CARTERET** (who had accompanied the Hon. Commodore Byron in his voyage) was soon after his return, appointed to the command of his Majesty's ship the *Swallow* (as mentioned in the preceding voyage) which then lay at Chatham, and he was ordered to fit her out with all possible expedition. When Captain Carteret received his instructions from Captain Wallis of the *Dolphin*, he was convinced that the *Swallow* and her equipment were by no means equal to the service, but he was determined, at all events, to perform it in the best manner he was able. The *Dolphin* and *Swallow* proceeded together till they came within sight of the South Sea at the western entrance of the streight of Magellan, and from thence returned by different routs to England. For the completion of the preceding voyage, we shall give an accurate account of Captain Carteret's,

as the information it contains is a necessary appendix to Captain Wallis's.

On Friday, the 22d of August, 1766, the ship's company having the evening before received two month's pay, they weighed, and made sail from Plymouth Sound, in company with the Dolphin and the Prince Frederick store-ship.

Sept. 9, after they had joined the Dolphin in Madeira Road, the lieutenant acquainted Capt. Carteret that, in the night, nine of his best men had secretly set off from the ship to swim on shore, having stripped themselves naked and left all their clothes behind them, taking only their money, which they had secured in a handkerchief that was tied round their waist; that they proceeded together till they came very near the surf, which breaks high upon the shore, and that one of them, being then terrified at the sound, had swam back again to the ship, and been taken on board, but that the rest had ventured through. As the loss of these men would have been very severely felt, the Captain immediately sat down to write a letter to the Consul, entreating his assistance to recover them; but before he had finished it, he received word, that all of them, having, to the great astonishment of the natives, been found on the beach, they had been taken into custody, and would be delivered up to his order. The boat was dispatched immediately, and as soon as the Captain heard they were on board, he went upon deck. He was pleased to see a contrition in their countenances, which at once secretly determined him not to inflict punishment, and by which they seemed most heartily willing to expiate their fault; but he asked them what could have induced them to quit the ship, and desert the service of their country, at the risk of be-

ing devoured by sharks, or dashed to pieces by the surf against the shore. They answered, that though they had indeed at such risks ventured to swim on shore, they never had any intention of deserting the ship, which they were determined to stand by as long as she could swim ; but that being well assured they were going a long voyage, and none being able to tell who might live, or who might die, they thought it hard not to have an opportunity of spending their own money, and therefore determined, as they said, once more to get a skinful of liquor, and then swim back to the ship, which they hoped to have done before they were missed. As Captain Carteret had resolved to remit their punishment, he did not too severely scrutinize their apology, which the rest of the ship's company, who stood round them, seemed very much to approve ; but, observing that with a skinful of liquor they would have been in a very unfit condition to swim through the surf to the ship, he told them that hoping they would for the future expose their lives only upon more important occasions, and that their conduct would thenceforward give him no cause of complaint, he would for this time be satisfied with the shame and regret which he perceived they suffered from a sense of their misbehaviour ; he then admonished them to put on their clothes, and lie down, as he was confident they wanted rest ; and added, that as he might possibly, during the course of the voyage have occasion for good swimmers, he was very glad that he knew to whom he might apply. Having thus dismissed these honest fellows from their fears, he was infinitely gratified by the murmur of satisfaction which instantly ran through the ship's company ; and was afterwards amply rewarded for his lenity, there being no service during



all the toils and dangers of the voyage which they did not perform, with a zeal and alacrity that were much to their honour and the Captain's advantage, as an example to the rest.

They proceeded on their voyage without any remarkable event, till they anchored off Cape Virgin Mary, where they saw the Patagonians, of which some account has been given in the two preceding voyages.

When they entered the Streight, Captain Carteret was ordered to keep ahead of the Dolphin, and the store-ship, to pilot them through the shoals; but his ship worked so ill, that they could but very seldom make her tack without the help of a boat to tow her round; however, with much labour, and at no inconsiderable risk, they anchored in Port Famine on the 26th of December. At this place they unhung their rudder, and added a piece of wood to it, in hopes that by making it broader, they should obtain some advantage in working the ship; in which, however, they were altogether disappointed.

After many difficulties and dangers they got into Island Bay on the 27th of February, and continued for some time to navigate the Streight with the Dolphin: as Captain Carteret had passed it before, he was ordered to keep ahead and lead the way, with liberty to anchor and weigh when he thought proper; but perceiving that the bad sailing of the Swallow would so much retard the Dolphin as probably to make her lose the season for getting into high south southern latitudes, and defeat the intention of her voyage, he proposed to Captain Wallis that he should lay the Swallow up in some cove or bay, and that he should attend and assist him with her boats till the Streight should be passed, which

would probably be in much less time than if he continued to be retarded by his ship; and Captain Carteret urged, as an additional advantage, that Captain Wallis might complete not only his stock of provisions and stores, but his company out of her, and then send her back to England, for such of his crew as sickness had rendered unfit for the voyage; proposing also, that in his way home, he would examine the eastern coast of Patagonia, or attempt such other discoveries as he should think proper. If this was not approved, and his knowledge of the South Seas was thought necessary to the success of the voyage, he offered to go with him on board the Dolphin, and give up the Swallow to be commanded by his first lieutenant, or to make the voyage himself with only the Dolphin, if he would take the Swallow back to Europe; but Captain Wallis was of opinion, that the voyage should be prosecuted by the two ships jointly, pursuant to the orders that had been given.

The Swallow was now become so foul, that with all the sail she could set, she could not make so much way as the Dolphin, with only her top sails and a rest in them; they continued in company, however, till the 10th of April, when the western entrance of the Streight was open, and the great South Sea in sight. Hitherto Captain Carteret had, pursuant to his directions, kept ahead, now the Dolphin being nearly abreast of them, set her fore sail, which soon carried her ahead of them; and before nine o'clock in the evening, as she shewed no lights, they lost sight of her. They had a fine eastern breeze, of which they made the best use they could during the night, carrying all their sails even to the top-gallant studding sails, notwithstanding the danger to which

it exposed them; but at day-break the next morning, they could but just see the Dolphin's top-sails above the horizon; they could perceive, however, that she had studding-sails set, and at nine o'clock they had entirely lost sight of her; they judged that she was then clear of the Streight's mouth, but they who were still under the land, had but light and variable airs. From this time, Captain Carteret gave up all hope of seeing the Dolphin again till they should arrive in England, no plan of operation having been settled, nor any place of rendezvous appointed, as had been done from England to the Streight. He thought himself the more unfortunate in this separation, as no part of the woollen cloth, linen, beads, scissars, knives, and other cutlery-ware, and toys, which were intended for the use of both ships, and were so necessary to obtain refreshments from the Indians, had, during the nine months they had sailed together, been put on board the Swallow; and they were not provided either with a forge or iron, which many circumstances might render absolutely necessary to the preservation of the ship; he had the satisfaction, however, to see no marks of despondency among his people, whom he encouraged, by telling them, that although the Dolphin was the best ship, he did not doubt but that he should find more than equivalent advantages in their courage, ability, and good conduct.

At noon they were abreast of Cape Pillar, when, a gale springing up at S. W. they were obliged to take down their small sails, reef their top-sails, and haul close to the wind; soon after it freshened to the W. S. W. blowing right in from the sea, and after making two boards, they had the mortification to find that they

could not weather the land on either tack. It was now almost dark, the gale increased, driving before it a hollow swell, and a fog came on, with violent rain, therefore got close under the south shore, and sent their boat ahead to find out Tuesday's Bay, or any other place in which they might come to anchor. At five o'clock they could not see the land, notwithstanding its extreme height, though they were within less than half a mile of it, and at six the thickness of the weather having rendered the night so dark that they could not see half the ship's length, the captain brought to for the boat, and was indeed with good reason, under great concern for her safety; they hoisted lights, and every now and then made a false fire, but still doubting whether they could be seen through the fog and rain, he fired a gun every half hour, and at last had the satisfaction to take her on board, though she had made no discovery either of Tuesday's Bay, or any other anchoring place. They made sail the rest of the night, endeavouring to keep near the south shore, and their ground to the westward as much as possible; and as soon as it was light on the 12th, the captain sent the master again, out in the cutter, in search of an anchorage on the south shore. He waited in a state of the most painful suspense for her return, till five o'clock in the afternoon, fearing that they should be obliged to keep out in this dangerous pass another night, but he then saw her sounding a bay, and immediately stood in after her; in a short time the master came on board, and to their unspeakable comfort, reported that they might here come safely to anchor; this, with the help of their boat, was effected about six o'clock, and the captain went down into his cabin to take some rest; he had, however, scarcely lain down,

before he was alarmed with a universal shout and tumult among the people, all that were below running hastily upon the deck, and joining the clamour of those above; he instantly started up, imagining that a gust of wind had forced the ship from her anchor, and that she was driving out of the bay, but when he came upon deck, he heard the people cry out, the Dolphin! the Dolphin! in a transport of surprise and joy, which appeared little short of distraction; a few minutes, however, convinced them what had been taken for a sail was nothing more than the water which had been forced up, and whirled about in the air, by one of the violent gusts that were continually coming off the high land, and which, through the haze, had a most deceitful appearance. The people were for a few minutes somewhat dejected by their disappointment, but before the captain went down, he had the pleasure to see their usual fortitude and cheerfulness return.

The little bay where they were now at anchor, lies about three leagues E. by S. from Cape Pillar; it is the first place which had any appearance of a bay within that Cape, and bears S. by E. about four leagues from the island which Sir John Narborough called Westminster Hall, from its resemblance to that building in a distant view. The western point of this bay makes a very remarkable appearance, being a perpendicular plain like the wall of a house. There are three islands about two cables' length within its entrance, and within those islands a very good harbour, with anchorage in between twenty-five and thirty fathom, with a bottom of soft mud. They anchored without the islands, the passage on each side of them being not more than one fourth of a cables' length wide. The little bay is about two



cables' length broad, the points bearing east and west of each other ; in the inner part there is from sixteen to eighteen fathom, but where they lay it is deeper ; they had one anchor in seventeen fathom, and the other in forty five, with great over falls between them, and rocks in several places. Here they rode out a very hard gale, and the ground being extremely uneven, they expected their cables to be cut in two every minute, yet when they weighed, to their great surprise, they did not appear to have been rubbed in any part, though they found it very difficult to heave them clear of the rocks. The land round this bay and harbour is all high, and as the current sets continually into it, Captain Carteret is sure it has another communication with the sea to the south of Cape Deseada. The master said he went up it four miles in a boat, and could not then be above four miles from the Western Ocean, yet he still saw a wide entrance to the S. W. The landing is every where good, there is plenty of wood and water, and mussels and wild geese in abundance.

From the north shore of the western end of the Streight of Magellan, which lies in about latitude  $52^{\circ}$   $\frac{1}{2}$  S. to latitude  $48^{\circ}$ , the land, which is the western coast of Patagonia, runs nearly north and south, and consists wholly of broken islands. Till they came into this latitude, they had tolerable good weather, and little or no current in any direction, but when they came to the northward of  $48^{\circ}$ , they found a current setting strongly to the north, so that probably they then opened the great bay, which is said to be ninety leagues deep. They found here a vast swell from the N. W. and the winds generally blew from the same quarter ; yet they were

set every day twelve or fifteen miles to the northward of their account.

On the 15th, at about four o'clock in the morning, after surmounting many dangers and difficulties, they once more got abreast of Cape Pillar, with a light breeze, at S. E. and a great swell. Between five and six o'clock, just as they opened Cape Deseada, the wind suddenly shifted to S. and S. by W. and blew so hard that it was with great difficulty they could carry the reefed top sails; the sudden changing of the wind, and its excessive violence, produced a sea so dreadfully hollow, that great quantities of water were thrown in upon their deck, so that they were in the utmost danger of foundering; yet they did not dare to shorten sail, it being necessary to carry all they could spread, in order to weather the rocky islands (called by Sir John Narborough the islands of Direction) for they could not now run back again into the Streight, without falling down among the broken land, and incurring the dangers of the northern shore, which was to leeward; towards this broken land, however, and lee shore, the ship settled very fast, notwithstanding their utmost efforts; in this pressing emergency they were obliged to stave all the water-casks upon the deck, and between decks, to clear the vessel, and to make her carry better sail, and at length happily escaped the danger which threatened them. After they got clear of these islands, and drew off from the Streight's mouth and the land, they found the sea run more regularly from the S. W. and the wind soon after coming from S. S. W. to S. S. E. they had by noon got a pretty good offing, about nine leagues from Cape Victory, which is on the north shore. Thus they cleared the western entrance of the Streight, which, in

Captain Carteret's opinion, is too dangerous for navigation; a deliverance which happened in the very crisis of their fate, for almost immediately afterwards, the wind came again to the S. W. and if it had continued in that quarter, their destruction would have been inevitable.

Having got clear of the Streight, they steered to the northward along the coast of Chili. Upon examining what quantity of fresh water they had now on board, they found that it amounted only to between four and five and twenty tons, which was thought not sufficient for so long a voyage as was probably before them; they therefore hauled to the northward, intending to make the island of Juan Fernandes, or Masafuero, that they might increase their stock before they sailed to the westward.

In the middle of the night of the 16th, they had the wind first to the S. S. E. and then to the S. E. with which they kept away N. W. and N. N. W. in high spirits, hoping that in a short time they should be in a more temperate climate; they had the misfortune, however, very soon to find themselves disappointed, for on the 18th, the wind came to the N. N. W. and blew directly from the point upon which they were steering. They had now got about a hundred leagues from the Streight's mouth; their latitude was  $48^{\circ} 39'$  S. and they were, by account,  $4^{\circ} 33'$  W. of Cape Pillar; but from this time till the 8th of May, the wind continued unfavourable, and blew a continued storm, with sudden gusts still more violent, and much rain and hail, or rather fragments of half-melted ice; at intervals also they had thunder and lightning, more dreadful than all the

past, and a sea which frequently laid the whole vessel under water.

From the time of their clearing the Streight, and during their passage along this coast, they saw a great number of sea birds, particularly albatrosses, gannets, sheerwaters, and a thick lumpish bird, about as big as a large pigeon, which the sailors call a Cape of Good Hope hen; they are of a dark brown or blackish colour, and are therefore sometimes called the black gull; they saw also a great many pintado birds, of nearly the same size, which are prettily spotted with black and white, and are constantly on the wing, though they frequently appear as if they were walking upon the water, like the peterels, to which sailors have given the name of Mother Carey's chickens; and they saw also many of these.

On the 27th, in the evening, which was very dark, as they were standing to the westward, under their courses, and a close-reefed top-sail, the wind, in a hard squall, suddenly shifted, and took the vessel right ahead; the violent jerk, with which the sails were instantly thrown aback, was very near carrying the masts away by the board, and oversetting the ship; the sails being at this time extremely wet, and the gale in the highest degree violent, they clung so fast to the masts and rigging, that it was scarcely possible to get them either up or down; yet by the dexterous activity of the men, they got the main-sail up, clewed up the main-top-sail, and got the ship's head round without receiving much damage. The violence of the wind continued several hours, but before morning it veered again to the N. W. and continued in that quarter till the afternoon of the 29th, when it died away, and they had a dead calm for six

hours. During this time they had a high sea, which ran in great confusion from all quarters, and broke against the ship in a strange manner, making her roll with so violent and sudden a motion, that they expected every moment to lose their masts. The wind afterwards sprung up at W. S. W. which was fair, and they carried all the sail they could set to make the most of it. It blew very hard in this direction, with heavy rain for a few hours, but by noon the next day, it returned to its usual quarter, the N. W. and was so violent as to bring them again under their courses, there being at the same time a prodigious swell, which frequently broke over them. At five o'clock in the morning of the 1st of May, as they were lying to under the reefed main-sail and balanced mizen, a vast sea broke over the quarter where the ship's oars were lashed, and carried away six of them, with the weather-cloth; it also broke the mizen gaff close where the sail was reefed, and the iron strap of one of the main dead eyes, laying the whole vessel for some time under water; they were, however, fortunate enough to haul up the main-sail without splitting, though it blew a hurricane, and a deluge of rain, or rather of half-melted ice, at the same time poured down upon them. The wind soon after shifted again from N. W. to S. W. and for about an hour blew, if possible, stronger than ever. The wind made the ship come up with her head right against the vast sea which the north-west wind had raised, and at every pitch which she made against it, the end of the bowsprit was under water, and the surge broke over the fore-castle as far aft as the main-mast, in the same manner as it would have broke over a rock, so that there was the greatest reason to apprehend she would founder. With all her



defects she was a good sea boat, otherwise it would have been impossible for her to have outlived this storm. Notwithstanding this wind was fair, they durst not venture to put the ship before it, for if in wearing, any of these enormous seas had broken on her side, it would inevitably have carried away all before it. After some time, however, it became more moderate, and they then got up their yards and made sail, steering N. by W. and now the men having been up all night, and being wet to the skin, were ordered every one of them a dram.

By the next morning the wind came again to the N. W. and N. by W. but by this time they had got down the broken mizen gaff, repaired it as well as they could, got it up again in its place, and bent the sail to it, but they now most sensibly felt the want of the forge and iron.

On the 3<sup>d</sup>, at day-break, they found the rudder-chain broken, and upon this occasion they again most feelingly regretted the want of a forge; they made, however, the best shift they could, and the next day the weather being more moderate, though the wind was still contrary, they repaired their rigging, and the carpenters fixed a new dead eye where the old one had been broken; the sail-maker also was busy in mending the sails that had been split.

On the 5<sup>th</sup>, they were again brought under their courses by a hurricane from the N. by W. and N. N. W. and the ship was tossed about with such violence that they had no command of her. During this storm, two of their chain-plates were broken, and they continued toiling in a confused hollow sea till midnight, when a light gale sprung up at N. W. which soon blew very

hard ; but at two the next morning, they were again taken right ahead by a sudden and violent squall at west, which at once threw all their sails aback, and before they could get the ship round, was very near carrying all by the board. With this gale they stood north, and in the forenoon the carpenters fixed new chain-plates to the main shrouds, and one to the fore shrouds, in the place of those which had been broken in the squall during the night. The gale continued in this direction till eight in the morning of the 7th, when it returned to the N. W. with unsettled weather. On the 8th it came to south, and this was a fine day, the first they had seen after their leaving the Streight of Magellan. Their latitude at noon was  $36^{\circ} 39'$  S. and they were about five degrees to the westward of Cape Pillar. The next day they made the island of Masafuero, and on the 10th the island of Juan Fernandes ; in the afternoon they got close to the easternmost part of it, and soon after hauled round the north end, and opened Cumberland Bay. As the captain did not know that the Spaniards had fortified this island, he was greatly surprised to see a considerable number of men about the beach, with a house and four pieces of cannon near the water-side and a fort about three hundred yards farther from the sea, just upon the rising of the hill, with Spanish colours flying on the top of it. This fort, which is faced with stone, has eighteen or twenty embrasures, and within it a long house, which Captain Carteret supposed to be the barracks for the garrison ; five and twenty or thirty houses of different kinds are scattered round it, and they saw much cattle feeding on the brow of the hills, which seemed cultivated, as many spots were divided by enclosures from each other ; they saw also two large boats

lying on the beach. The gusts of wind which came right out of this bay, prevented the captain going so near as he intended, for they were so violent as to oblige them many times to let fly their top-sail sheets, though the sails were close reefed ; and he thinks it is impossible to work a ship into this bay when the wind blows hard from the southward. As they stood across the bay to the westward, one of the boats put off from the shore, and rowed towards them ; but perceiving that the gusts, or flaws, made them lie at a considerable distance from the land, she went in again. They then opened West Bay, on the east part of which, close to the sea side, is a small house, which the captain took for a guard house, and two pieces of cannon mounted upon their carriages, without any works about them. They now wore, and stood again for Cumberland Bay, but as soon as they opened it, the boat again put off, and made towards them ; as the hard gusts would not permit them to come any nearer to the land than before, they stood along it to the eastward, the boat still making after them till she was very far out of the bay ; at length it grew dark, and they lost sight of her, upon which they made all the sail they could to the eastward. During all this time Captain Carteret hoisted no colours, having none but English on board, which at this time he did not think it proper to shew. As he was disappointed of wood and water at this place, and of the refreshments, of which after the dangers and fatigue of their voyage through the Streight, and their passage from it, they stood in the most pressing need, he made all the sail he could for the island of Masafuero. On the 12th they arrived off the south-eastermost part of it, but it blowing hard, with a great sea, they did not dare to come

near it on this side, and therefore went round to the west side, where, in the evening, they cast anchor upon an excellent bank, fit to receive a fleet of ships, which, in the summer, might tide here with great advantage. The Captain sent out both the boats to endeavour to get some water, but they found it impossible to land, for the beach is rocky, and the surf at this time was so great, that the swimmers could not get through the breakers; this was the more mortifying as they saw a fine run of fresh water from the ship, with plenty of trees fit for fire wood, and a great number of goats upon the hills.

The next morning, as soon as it was light, the boats were sent out again, to examine any place where they could get on shore. They returned with a few casks of water, which they had filled at a small rill, and reported that the wind being at S. E. blew so strong on the east side of the island, and raised so great a sea, that they could not come near the shore. They continued here till the 15th, at day break, when the weather becoming more moderate, they weighed, and in the evening, just at sun-set, anchored on the east side of the island, in the same place where Commodore Byron had anchored. They lost no time, but immediately got off fifteen casks of water, and sent a number of men on shore with others, that were empty, to be filled against the next morning, and a strong party to cut wood; but it happened that about two o'clock in the morning of the 16th, a hard gale of wind came on from the N. W. with violent gusts from the shore, which drove them off the bank, though they had two anchors ahead, which were in the utmost danger of being lost; they got them up, however, with difficulty, and immediately set the sails, and

worked under the lee of the island, keeping as near the shore as they could ; the weather soon afterwards became more moderate, so that they could carry double reefed top-sails ; they had also very smooth water, yet could not make the ship tack, and were forced to wear her every time they wanted to go about.

At day-break, though they were at a distance from the shore, the cutter was sent to get on board a load of water, before the surf should be so great upon the beach as to prevent her landing. About ten o'clock, the wind came to the N. N. E. which enabled them to get within a little distance of the watering-place, and they might have recovered their anchoring ground upon the bank from which they had been driven, but the weather had so bad an appearance, and the gale freshened so fast, that they did not think it prudent to venture ; they brought to, however, as near the shore as possible, for the advantage of smooth water to unload the cutter, which soon after came along-side with twelve casks of water. As soon as they had taken these on board, the captain sent the cutter again for another freight, and as they were at a very little distance from land, he ventured to send their long boat, a clumsy, heavy, four oared vessel, with provisions for the people on shore, and orders to bring back a load of water, if they could get it ; as soon as these boats were dispatched, the Swallow made a tack off to keep their ground. At noon it blew hard, with heavy rain and thick weather, and at one, as they were standing in again, they saw the boats running along the shore, for the lee part of the island, this side being open to the wind ; they therefore followed them, and brought to as near the shore as possible, to favour their coming on board ; they presently made towards them, and



hoisted them in ; but the sea was now risen so high, that in doing it they received considerable damage, and they soon learnt that they found the surf so great as not to be able even to land their empty water-casks. They continued to lie to, under a balanced mizen, off the lee-part of the island all the afternoon, and although all hands had been constantly employed ever since the ship had been driven off her anchoring-ground, the carpenters worked all night in repairing the boats.

At four o'clock in the morning of the 17th, the island bore west of them, being four leagues distant, and right to windward ; they had now a fine gale and smooth water, and about ten o'clock they fetched very near to the south part of it, and with the help of the boat made the ship tack. As it was not probable that with such a vessel they could regain the anchoring ground, the captain took advantage of their being so near the shore, though at a good distance from the watering-place, to send the cutter for another load. In the mean time he stood on and off with the ship, and about four o'clock in the afternoon the cutter brought her freight of water on board. He enquired of the lieutenant after the people on shore, and he said, that the violent rain which had fallen in the night, had suddenly brought down such torrents of water through the hollow or gully where they had taken up their station, that they were in the utmost danger of being swept away before it, and though with great difficulty they saved themselves, several of the casks were entirely lost. It was now too late for the boat to make another turn to the place where they had hitherto got their water ; but Mr. Erasmus Gower, the lieutenant having, as he returned with the cutter, observed that many runs of water had been made by the

night's rain, on that part of the island which was nearest to them, and knowing how impatient the captain was of delay, offered to go thither with the boat, and fill as many casks as she could bring back. Captain Carteret gladly accepted this offer. Mr. Gower went away in the boat, and in the mean time the captain made a tack off with the ship; but before they had been gone an hour, the weather began to grow gloomy, and the wind to freshen; a heavy black cloud at the same time settled over the island so as to hide the tops of the hills, and soon after it began to thunder and lighten at a dreadful rate; as these appearances were very threatening, the captain stood in again towards the island in hopes of meeting with the boat; but though they ran in as close as they durst, they saw nothing of her. In the mean time night came on, which the thickness of the weather rendered extremely dark, the gale increased, and it began to rain with great violence; in this situation, the *Swallow* lay to under a balanced mizen, firing guns, and burning false fires, as a guide to the boat; and not being able to account for her delay, the captain began to fear that she was lost. About seven o'clock, however, to their unspeakable satisfaction, she came safe along-side, and as he had long seen a storm gathering, which he expected every moment to burst upon them, they got her in with all possible expedition. It was indeed happy for them all that no time was lost, for before she could be got into her place, the squall came on, which in a moment laid the ship down in a surprising manner, and broke the mizen gaff just where the sail was reefed; so that if another minute had passed before the boat had been got in, they must inevitably have lost her, and every soul on board would

have perished. This wind and weather continued till midnight, when it became somewhat moderate, so that they were able to set their courses and top-sails. In the mean time the captain had inquired of Mr. Gower how it came to be so long before he returned to the ship, and he said, that after he had got to the place where he intended to fill the casks, three of the boat's crew had swam ashore with them for that purpose; but that within a few minutes, the surf had risen so high, and broke with such fury on the shore, that it was impossible for them to get back to the boat; that being unwilling to leave them behind, especially as they were stark naked, he had waited in hopes that an opportunity might be found for their coming on board; but that being intimidated by the appearance of the weather, and the uncommon darkness of the night, he had at last, with great reluctance, been obliged to come on board without them. The situation of these poor fellows now furnished another subject of solicitude and anxiety; they were naked, upon a desolate island, at a great distance from the watering-place where their ship-mates had a tent, without food, and without shelter, in a night of violent and incessant rain, with such thunder and lightning as in Europe is altogether unknown. In the evening of the 19th, however, Captain Carteret had the satisfaction to receive them on board, and to hear an account of their adventures from their own lips. As long as it was light they flattered themselves like their friends in the boat, that they should find an opportunity to return on board her; but afterwards, when the darkness of the night was broken only by the flashes of lightning, and the tempest became every moment more violent, they knew that to reach the boat was impossible, if

it still remained in its station; and that most probably the people on board had provided for their own safety, by returning on board the ship; to reach the tent of their ship mates, during the darkness and tempest, was equally beyond their power, and they were reduced to the necessity of passing such a night, in such a place, without the least defence against either the rain or the cold, which now began to be severely felt. They contrived to procure a temporary succedaneum both for apparel and a shed, by lying one upon another, each man placing himself between the other two; in this situation it may easily be believed that they longed most ardently for the dawn, and as soon as it appeared they set out for the tent; they were obliged however to make their way along the sea shore, for the inland country was impassable; nor was this the worst, for they were frequently stopped by high steep bluff points, which they were obliged to swim round at a considerable distance; for if they had not taken a compass, they would have been dashed to pieces against the rocks by the surf, and as it was they were every moment in danger of being devoured by a shark. About ten o'clock in the morning, however, they reached the tents, almost perished with hunger and cold, and were received with equal surprise and joy by their shipmates, who immediately shared with them such provisions and clothes as they had. When they came on board, the captain gave orders that they should have such refreshments as were proper, and remain in their hammocks the whole night. The next day they were as hearty as if nothing had happened, nor did they suffer any farther inconvenience from the accident. These were three of the honest fellows who

had swam naked from the ship at the island of Madeira to get a skinful of liquor.

As they now approached the land very fast, the captain sent the boat on shore again for water ; it happened however, that before they could reach their anchoring-ground, it again fell calm, and they again kept off by the current ; the boat in the mean time, as she rowed along the shore, caught as much fish with hook and line, as served all the ship's company, which was some alleviation of their disappointment. At eight o'clock in the evening, it began again to blow hard with sudden squalls, so that they passed another toilsome and dangerous night. In the morning of the 20th, having a stiff gale at N. W. they made towards their anchoring-ground with all the sail they could spread, and happily regained it about four o'clock in the afternoon. when they anchored, at two cables' length from the beach, in eighteen fathom, with a bottom of fine sand, and moored with a small anchor in shore. By the time the ship was secured, it was too late to proceed properly with their watering ; the long boat, however, was sent along the shore to fish, and though before seven o'clock it blew so hard that she was obliged to return, she brought fish enough on board to serve all the people. In the night they had foul weather, with hard squalls and much rain ; and the next morning the wind blowing with great violence along the shore, they frequently drove, though they had not less than two hundred fathom of cable out ; for the bank is a loose fine sand that easily gives way. They rode out the storm, however, without damage, but the rain was so violent, and the sea ran so high, that nothing could be done with the boats, which was the more mortifying, as it was for the sake of completing their water-



ing they had endured almost incessant labour for five days and nights to regain the situation in which they now lay. About eight in the evening, the wind became more moderate, and though it was then too late to fetch off any water, they got out one of the boats, and sent three men on shore, right abreast of the ship, to kill seals, and make oil of their fat, for burning in lamps, and other uses on board the ship.

The wind continued to blow very hard on the 22d, but being at W. N. W. which was off the land, they sent the boats away soon after it was light, and about ten, they returned with each of them a load of water, and a great number of pintado birds; these birds they got from the people on shore, who told them, that when a gale of wind happened in the night they flew faster into the fire than they could well take them out, so that during the gale of the last night, they got no less than seven hundred of them. The boats were employed in getting water on board all this day, although the surf was so great that several of the casks were staved and lost; they were sent out again a little before it was light the next day, and by seven o'clock a few casks only were wanting to complete their stock. The threatening appearance of the weather made the captain now very impatient to get the people on board, with the casks that were still at the watering-place; as soon therefore as the boats were cleared of their loading, he dispatched them again, with orders to bring off all the hands, with the tent, and every thing else that was on shore, with all possible expedition. From this time the wind increased very fast, and by eleven o'clock it blew so hard, with violent gusts from the land, that the ship began to drive off the bank; they heaved the small an-

chor up, and got it in out of the way of the other ; the gale still increased, but as it was right off the land, the captain was in no pain about the ship, which continued to drive, still dragging the anchor through the sand, with two hundred fathom of cable out ; being very solicitous to give the boats time to bring all on board before they were quit of the bank, he would not weigh. At two o'clock, however, the anchor was quite off the ground, and the ship was in deep water ; they were now, therefore, obliged to bring the cable to the capstern, and with great difficulty got the anchor up. The gusts off the land were so violent that, not daring to show any canvass, they lay to under their bare poles, and the water was frequently torn up, and whirled round in the air, much higher than their mast heads. As the ship now drove from the island at a great rate, and night was coming on, Captain Carteret began to be in great pain for the boats, in which, besides his lieutenant, there were eight and twenty of his best men ; but just in the dusk of the evening he perceived one of them scudding before the seas, and making towards the ship ; this proved to be the long-boat, which in spite of all the efforts of those on board, had been forced from their grappling, and driven off the land. They took the best opportunity that offered to get her on board, but notwithstanding all their care, she received considerable damage as they were hoisting her in. She had on board ten, who reported that when they were first driven from the shore, they had some fire-wood on board, but they were obliged to throw that, and every thing else, into the sea, to lighten the boat. As they had yet seen nothing of the cutter, and had reason to fear that she also, with the tents, and the other eighteen people, besides

the lieutenant, had been driven off the island, the captain gave her up for lost ; knowing that if the night, which was now at hand, should overtake her in such a storm, she must inevitably perish. It was, however, possible that the people might be ashore, and therefore that, if the boat should be lost, they might be still preserved ; for this reason, he determined to regain the land as soon as possible. At midnight, the weather became more moderate, so that they could carry their courses and top-sails, and at four o'clock in the morning of the 24th, they crowded all the sail they could make. At ten they were very near the shore ; to their great concern, they saw nothing of the cutter, yet they continued to stand on till about noon, when they happily discovered her at a grappling, close under the land ; they immediately ran to their glasses, by the help of which they saw the people getting into her, and about three o'clock, to their mutual and inexpressible joy, she came safe on board with all her people ; they were however so exhausted with fatigue, that they could scarcely get up the ship's side. The lieutenant said, that the night before they had attempted to come off, but that as soon as he had left the shore, a sudden squall so nearly filled the boat with water that she was very near going to the bottom ; but that all hands bailing with the utmost diligence and activity, they happily cleared her ; that he then made for the land again, which, with the utmost difficulty, he regained, and having left a sufficient number on board the boat, to watch her, and keep her free from water, he with the rest of the people went on shore. That having passed the night in a state of inexpressible anxiety and distress, they looked out for the ship with the first dawn of the morning, and seeing no-

thing of her, concluded that she had perished in the storm, which they had never seen exceeded. They began immediately to clear the ground near the beach of brushes and weeds, and cut down several trees of which they made rollers to assist them in hauling up the boat, in order to secure her; intending, as they had no hope of the ship's return to wait till the summer season, and then attempt to make the island of Juan Fernandes. They had now better hopes, and all sense of the dangers that were before them was for a while obliterated by the joy of their escape from those that were past.

The island of Masafuero lies in latitude  $33^{\circ} 45' S.$  longitude  $80^{\circ} 40' W.$  of London\*. Its situation is west of Juan Fernandes, both being nearly in the same latitude, and by the globe, it is distant about 31 leagues. It is very high and mountainous, and at a distance appears like one hill or rock; it is of a triangular form, and about seven or eight leagues in circumference. The south part, which they saw when they first made the island, at the distance of three and twenty leagues, is much the highest; on the north end there are several spots of clear ground, which perhaps might admit of cultivation.

On the south-west point of the island there is a remarkable rock with a hole in it, which is a good mark to come to an anchor on the western side, in 20 and 22 fathom, where there is the best bank of any about the place. About a mile and a half to the northward of this hole, there is a low point of land, and from this point

---

\* The longitude is reckoned from London westward to  $180^{\circ}$ , and eastward afterwards.

runs a reef of rocks and sand, in the direction of W. by S. to the distance of about three quarters of a mile, where the sea continually breaks upon it. There is anchorage also at several places on the other side of the island, particularly off the north point, in 14 and 15 fathom, with fine sand. There is plenty of wood and water all round the island, but they are not to be procured without much difficulty, as a great quantity of stones, and large fragments of the rock have fallen from the high land all round the island, and upon these there breaks such a surf that a boat cannot safely come within a cable's length of the shore; there is therefore no landing here but by swimming from the boat, and then mooring her without the rocks, nor is there any method of getting off the wood and water but by hauling them to the boat with ropes.

This part of Masafuero is a very good place for refreshment, especially in the summer season; the goats are numerous, and there is all round the island such plenty of fish, that a boat may, with three hooks and lines, catch as much as will serve an hundred people; among others they caught excellent coal fish, cavallies, cod, hallibut, and cray fish. They took a kingfisher that weighed eighty-seven pounds, and was five feet and a half long, and the sharks were so ravenous, that when they were sounding, one of them swallowed the lead, by which they hauled him above water, but as he then disgorged it, they lost him. The seals were very numerous; they were obliged to kill great numbers of them, as, when they walked on shore, they were continually running against them, making at the same time a most horrible noise. These animals yield excellent train oil, and their hearts and plucks are very good



eating, being in taste something like those of a hog, and their skins are covered with the finest fur ever seen of the kind. There are many birds here, and among others some very large hawks. They had not much opportunity to examine the place for vegetable productions, but saw several leaves of the mountain cabbage, which is a proof that the tree grows here.

---

---

---

*CHAP. II.*

---

---

Departure from Masafuero—Account of some small Islands—Discovery of Queen Charlotte's Islands—Transactions at Egmont Island—Passage to Nova Britannia—Several other Islands discovered—Description of the Inhabitants, &c.

HAVING taken their departure from Masafuero, they had a great sea from the N. W. with a swell of long billows from the southward, and the wind, which was from the S. W. to the W. N. W. obliged them to stand to the northward, in hope of getting the south-east trade wind, for the ship was so dull a sailer, that there was no making her go without a strong wind in her favour. Having thus run farther to the northward than he at first intended, the captain finding himself not far from the parallel of latitude, which has been assigned to two islands, called St. Ambrose, and St. Felix or St. Paul, bore away for that latitude; he, however, missed the islands, and as he saw great numbers of birds and fish, which are certain indications of land not far off, he concluded that he went to the northward of them. He kept between the latitude  $25^{\circ} 50'$  and  $25^{\circ} 30'$  in search of those islands, till he got five degrees to the westward of their departure, and then seeing no land, and the birds having left them they hauled more to the southward,

and got into latitude  $27^{\circ} 20' S.$  where they continued till they got between seventeen and eighteen degrees to the westward of their departure. In this parallel they had light airs and foul winds, with a strong northerly current, which made the captain conjecture that they were near Davis's Land, for which they looked out with great diligence, but a fair wind springing up again, they steered west by south, which gradually brought them into the latitude of  $28^{\circ} \frac{1}{2} S.$

They continued their search till the 17th of June, when in latitude  $28^{\circ} S.$  longitude  $112^{\circ} W.$  they saw many sea birds, which flew in flocks, and some rock-weed, which made them conjecture that they were approaching, or had passed by some land. At this time the wind blew hard from the northward, which made a great sea, but they had notwithstanding long rolling billows from the southward, so that whatever land was in that quarter, could be only small rocky islands. It was now the depth of winter in these parts, and they had hard gales and high seas that frequently brought them under their courses and low rails; the winds were also variable, and though they were near the tropic, the weather was dark, hazy, and cold, with frequent thunder and lightning, sleet, and rain. The sun was above the horizon about ten hours in the four and twenty, but they frequently passed many days together, without seeing him; and the weather was so thick, that when he was below the horizon the darkness was dreadful; the gloominess of the weather was indeed not only disagreeable, but a most dangerous circumstance, as they were often long without being able to make an observation, and were, notwithstanding, obliged to carry all the sail they could spread, day, and night, their ship being so bad

a sailer, and their voyage so long, to prevent their perishing by hunger, which, with all its concomitant horrors, would otherwise be inevitable.

They continued their course westward till the evening of July 2, when they discovered land to the northward. Upon approaching it the next day, it appeared like a great rock rising out of the sea; it was not more than five miles in circumference, and seemed to be uninhabited; it was, however, covered with trees, and they saw a small stream of fresh water running down one side of it. The captain would have landed upon it, but the surf, which at this season broke upon it with great violence, rendered it impossible. He got sounding on the west side of it, at somewhat less than a mile from the shore, in twenty-five fathom, with a bottom of coral and sand; and it is probable that in fine summer weather landing here may not only be practicable but easy. They saw a great number of sea-birds, hovering about it, at somewhat less than a mile from the shore, and the sea here seemed to have fish. It lies in latitude  $25^{\circ} 2' S.$  longitude  $133^{\circ} 21' W.$  and about a thousand leagues to the westward of the continent of America. It is so high that they saw it at the distance of more than fifteen leagues, and it having been discovered by a young gentleman, son to Major Pitcairn of the marines, who was unfortunately lost in the *Aurora*, they called it Pitcairn's Island. While in the neighbourhood of this island, the weather was extremely tempestuous, with long rolling billows from the southward. The winds were variable, but blew chiefly from the S. S. W., W. and W. N. W. They had very seldom a gale to the eastward, so that they were prevented from keeping in

a high south latitude, and were continually driving to the northward.

On the 4th they found that the ship made a good deal of water, for having been so long labouring in high and turbulent seas, she was become very crazy; their sails also being much worn, were continually splitting, so that it was become necessary to keep the sail-maker constantly at work. The people had hitherto enjoyed good health, but they now began to be affected with the scurvy. While in the Streight of Magellan, the captain caused a little awning to be made, which he covered with clean painted canvas, that had been a floor-cloth to his cabin; with this they caught so much rain water, that the people were never put to a short allowance of this important article; the awning also afforded shelter from the inclemency of the weather, and to these precautions, he imputed their having escaped the scurvy so long, though perhaps it was in some measure owing to the mixture of spirit of vitriol with the water that was thus preserved, the surgeon putting a small quantity into every cask when it was filled up.

On the 11th they discovered a small, low, flat island, which appeared to be almost level with the water's edge, and was covered with green trees; as it was to the south, and directly to windward of them, they could not fetch it. It lies in latitude  $22^{\circ}$  S. and longitude  $141^{\circ} 34'$  W.; and they called it the Bishop of Osnaburgh's Island, in honour of his Majesty's second son\*. The next day they fell in with two more small islands,

---

\* There is another island of this name, among those that were discovered by Captain Wallis.



which were covered with green trees, but appeared to be uninhabited. They were close in with the southernmost, which proved to be a slip of land in the form of a half moon, low, flat, and sandy; from the south end of it a reef runs out to the distance of about half a mile, on which the sea breaks with great fury. They found no anchorage, but the boat landed. It had a pleasant appearance, but afforded neither vegetables nor water; but there were, however, many birds upon it, so tame that they suffered themselves to be taken by hand. The other island very much resembles this, and is distant from it about five or six leagues; they lie W. N. W. and E. S. E. of each other. One of them is in latitude  $20^{\circ} 38' S.$  longitude  $146^{\circ} 15' W.$  and they called them the Duke of Gloucester's Islands; the variation here is five degrees east. These islands are probably the land seen by Quiros, as the situation is nearly the same; but if not, the land he saw could not be more considerable; whatever it was, they went to the southward of it, and the long billows they had here, convinced them that there was no land near them in that direction. The wind here being to the eastward, they hauled to the southward again, and on the 13th, in the evening, as they were steering W. S. W. they observed that they lost the long southerly billows, and that they got them again at seven o'clock the next day.

From this time, till the 16th, the winds were variable from N. E. round by the N. the N. W. and S. W. and blew very hard, with violent gusts, one of which was very near being fatal to them, with thick weather and hard rain. These were succeeded by a dead calm. After some time, however, the wind sprung up again at west, and at length settled in the W. S. W. which soon

drove them again to the northward, so that on the 20th they were in latitude  $19^{\circ}$  S. longitude  $75^{\circ} 30'$  W. of their departure; the variation here was  $6^{\circ}$  E.

On the 22d, they were got into latitude  $18^{\circ}$  S. longitude  $161^{\circ}$  W. which was about 1800 leagues to the westward of the continent of America, and in all this track they had no indication of a continent. The men now began to be very sickly, the scurvy having made great progress among them, and as the captain found that all his endeavors to keep in a high southern latitude at this time, were ineffectual, and that the badness of the weather, the variableness of the winds, and above all the defects of the ship, rendered their progress slow, he thought it absolutely necessary to fix upon that course which was most likely to preserve the vessel and the crew; instead therefore of attempting to return back by the south east, in which, considering their condition, and the advanced season of the year, it was scarcely possible that they should succeed, he bore away to the northward, that he might get into the trade-wind, keeping still in such a track as was most likely to bring him to some island, where the refreshments of which they stood so much in need might be procured; intending then, if the ship could be put into a proper condition, to have pursued the voyage to the southward, when the fit season should return, to have attempted farther discoveries in this track; and if he should discover a continent, and procure a sufficient supply of provisions there, to keep along the coast to the southward till the sun had crossed the equinoctial, and then, getting into a high southern latitude, either have gone west about to the Cape of Good Hope, or returned to the eastward, and

having touched at Falkland Islands if necessary, made the best of his way from thence back to Europe.

When they got into latitude  $16^{\circ}$  S. and not before they found the true trade-wind ; and as they proceeded to the north west, and the northward, they found the variation increase very fast. They had bad weather, with hard gales, and a great sea from the eastward till the 25th, when being in latitude  $12^{\circ} 15'$  S. they saw many birds flying in flocks, and supposed themselves to be near some land, particularly several islands that are laid down in the charts, and one which was seen by Commodore Byron in 1765, and called the Island of Danger ; none of these islands however, could they see. At this time it blew so hard that, although they went before the wind, they were obliged to reef their top-sails, and the weather was still very thick and rainy. The next morning being in latitude  $10^{\circ}$  S. longitude  $167^{\circ}$  W. they kept nearly in the same parallel, in hopes to have fallen in with some of the islands called Solomon's Islands, this being the latitude in which the southermost of them is laid down. They had here the trade wind strong, with violent squalls and much rain, and continuing their course till August 3, they were then in latitude  $10^{\circ} 18'$  S. longitude, by account,  $177^{\circ} \frac{1}{2}$  E. their distance west from the continent of America about twenty-one hundred leagues, and they were five degrees to the westward of the situation of those islands in the charts. It was not their good fortune however to fall in with any land ; probably they might have passed near some, which the thick weather prevented their seeing ; for in this run great numbers of sea birds were often about the ship.

From the latitude  $14^{\circ}$  S. longitude  $163^{\circ} 46'$  W. they had a strong gale from the S. E. which made a great sea

after them, and from that the captain did not observe the long billows from the southward till they got into latitude  $10^{\circ} 18' S.$  longitude  $177^{\circ} 30' E.$  and then it returned from the S. W. and S. S. W. and they found a current setting to the southward, although a current in the contrary direction had attended them almost all the way from the Streight of Magellan; Captain Carteret therefore conjectured that here the passage opened between New Zealand and New Holland.

About this time they found their stock of loglines nearly expended, though they had already converted all their fishing lines to the same use. The captain was some time in great perplexity how to supply this defect, but upon a very diligent inquiry found that they had, by chance, a few fathom of thick untarred rope. This, which in their situation was an inestimable treasure, he ordered to be untwisted; but as the yarns were found to be too thick for their purpose, it became necessary to pick them into oakham; and when this was done, the most difficult part of the work remained; for this oakham could not be spun into yarn, till, by combing, it was brought into hemp, its original state. This was not seamen's work, and if it had, they should have been at a loss how to perform it for want of combs; one difficulty therefore arose upon another, and it was necessary to make combs, before they could try their skill in making hemp. The armourer therefore was set to work to file nails down to a smooth point, with which they produced a tolerable succedaneum for a comb; and one of the quarter-masters was found sufficiently skilled in the use of this instrument to render the oakham so smooth and even, that they contrived to spin it into yarn, as fine as their course implements would admit; and

thus they made tolerable loglines, although they found it much more difficult than to make cordage of their old cables, after they had been converted into junk, which was an expedient that they had been obliged to practise long before. They had also long used all their sewing sail twine.

The scurvy still continued to make great progress among them, and those hands that were not rendered useless by disease, were worn down by excessive labour; their vessel, which at best was a dull sailer, had been long in so bad a condition that she would not work; and on the 10th, to render their condition still more distressful and alarming, she sprung a leak in the bows, which being under water, it was impossible to get at while they were at sea. Such was their situation, when on the 12th, at break of day, they discovered land; the sudden transport of hope and joy which this inspired, can perhaps be equalled only by that which a criminal feels who hears the cry of a reprieve at the place of execution. The land proved to be a cluster of islands, of which they counted seven. They kept on for two of them, which were right ahead when land was first discovered, and seemed to lie close together; in the evening they anchored on the north-east side of the largest and the highest, in about thirty fathom, with a good bottom, and at the distance of about three cables' length from the shore. They soon after saw two of the natives, who were black, with woolly heads, and stark naked; the captain immediately sent the master out with the boat to fix upon a watering-place, and speak to them, but they disappeared before she could reach the shore. The boat soon after returned with an account that there was a fine run of fresh water abreast of the ship, and



close to the beach, but that the whole country in that part being an almost impenetrable forest quite to the water's edge, the watering would be very difficult, and even dangerous, if the natives should come down to prevent it ; that there were no esculent vegetables, for the refreshment of the sick, nor any habitations as far as the country had been examined, which was wild, forlorn, and mountainous. Captain Carteret having considered this account, and finding that a swell, which came round the eastern part of the bay, would render watering troublesome and inconvenient, exclusive of the danger that might be apprehended from the natives, if they should attack them from ambushes in the wood, determined to try whether a better situation could not be found. The next morning therefore, as soon as it was light, he dispatched the master, with fifteen men, in the cutter, well armed, and provided, to examine the coast to the westward ; their present situation being on the lee of the island, for a place where they might more conveniently be supplied with wood and water, and at the same time procure some refreshments for the sick, and lay the ship by the stern to examine and stop the leak. He had some beads, ribbons, and other trifles, which they happened to have on board, to conciliate the good will of the natives, if he should happen to meet with any of them ; at the same time the captain enjoined him to run no risk, and gave him particular orders immediately to return to the ship if any number of canoes should approach him which might bring on hostilities ; and if he should meet the Indians in small parties, either as sea or upon shore, to treat them with all possible kindness, so as to establish a friendly intercourse with them ; charging him, on no account to leave the

boat himself, nor to suffer more than two men to go on shore at a time, while the rest stood ready for their defence; recommending to him, in the strongest terms, an application to his duty, without regarding any other object, as the finding a proper place for the ship was of the utmost importance; and conjuring him to return as soon as this service should be performed, with all possible speed.

Soon after, the captain sent the long-boat with ten men on board, well armed, to the shore, who, before eight o'clock, brought off a ton of water. About nine he sent her off again, but seeing some of the natives advancing along the shore towards the place where the men landed, he made the signal for them to return, not knowing to what number they would be exposed, and having no boat to send off with assistance if they should be attacked. The men had not long returned on board, when they saw three of the natives sit down under the trees abreast of the ship. As they continued there gazing at them till the afternoon, as soon as the cutter came in sight, not caring that both the boats should be absent at the same time, the captain sent his lieutenant in the long boat, with a few beads, ribbons, and trinkets, to endeavour to establish some kind of intercourse with them, and by their means with the rest of the inhabitants; these men, however, before the boat could reach the shore, quitted their station, and proceeded along the beach. As the trees would soon prevent their being seen by the English, who were making towards the land, those in the ship kept their eyes fixed upon them, and very soon perceived that they were now met by three others. After some conversation, the first three went on, and those who met them proceeded towards the

boat with a hasty pace. Upon this the captain made the signal to the lieutenant to be upon his guard, and as soon as he saw the Indians, observing that there were no more than three, he backed the boat into the shore, and making signs of friendship, held up to them the beads and ribbons which he had given him as presents, the men at the same time carefully concealing their arms. The Indians, however, taking no notice of the beads and ribbons, resolutely advanced within the bow-shot, and then suddenly discharged their arrows, which happily went over the boat without doing any mischief; they did not prepare for a second discharge, but instantly ran away into the woods, and the sailors discharged some musquets after them, but none of them were wounded by the shot. Soon after this happened, the cutter came under the ship's side, and the first person that the captain particularly noticed was the master, with three arrows sticking in his body. No other evidence was necessary to convict him of having acted contrary to his orders, which appeared indeed more fully from his own account of the matter, which it is reasonable to suppose was as favourable to himself as he could make it. He said, "that having seen some Indian houses with only five or six of the inhabitants, at a place about fourteen or fifteen miles to the westward of the ship's station, where he had sounded some bays, he came to a grappling, and veered the boat to the beach, where he landed with four men, armed with musquets and pistols; that the Indians at first were afraid of him, and he gave them some beads and other trifles, with which they seemed to be much pleased; that he then made signs to them for some cocoa-nuts, which they brought him, and with great appearance of friendship and hospitality, gave him a

broiled fish and some boiled yams ; that he then proceeded with his party to the houses, which, he said, were not more than fifteen or twenty yards from the water side, and soon after saw a great number of canoes coming round the western point of the bay, and many Indians among the trees ; that being alarmed at these appearances, he hastily left the house where they had been received, and with the men made the best of his way towards the boat ; but that, before he could get on board, the Indians attacked as well those that were with him as those that were in the boat, both from the canoes and the shore. Their number, he said, was between three and four hundred ; their weapons were bows and arrows, the bows were six feet five inches long, and the arrows four feet four, which they discharged in platoons, as regularly as the best disciplined troops in Europe ; that it being necessary to defend himself and the people, when they were thus attacked, they fired among the Indians to favour their getting into their boat, and did great execution, killing many and wounding more ; that they were not, however, discouraged, but continued to press forward, still discharging their arrows by platoons in almost one continued flight ; that the grappling being foul, occasioned a delay in hauling off the boat, during which time he, and half of the boat's crew, were desperately wounded ; that at last they cut the rope, and ran off under their foresail, still keeping up<sup>s</sup> their fire with blunderbusses, each loaded with eight or ten pistol balls, which the Indians returned with their arrows, those on shore wading after them, breast-high, into the sea ; when they had got clear of these, the canoes pursued them with great fortitude and vigour, till one of them was sunk,

and the numbers on board the rest greatly reduced by the fire, and then returned to the shore."

Such was the story of the master, who, with three of the best seamen, died some time afterwards of the wounds they had received ; but culpable as he appears to have been by his own account, he appears to have been still more so by the testimony of those who survived him. They said, " that the Indians behaved with the greatest confidence and friendship till he gave them just cause of offence, by ordering the people that were with him, who had been regaled in one of their houses, to cut down a cocoa-nut tree, and insisting upon the execution of his order, notwithstanding the displeasure which the Indians strongly expressed upon the occasion ; as soon as a tree fell, all of them, except one, who seemed to be a person of authority, went away ; and in a short time a great number of them were observed to draw together into a body among the trees, by a midshipman who was one of the party that were on shore, and who immediately acquainted the master with what he had seen, and told him, that from the behaviour of the people he imagined an attack was intended ; that the master made light of the intelligence, and instead of repairing immediately to the boat, as he was urged to do, fired one of his pistols at a mark ; that the Indian who had till that time continued with them, left them abruptly, and joined the body in the wood ; that the master, even after this, by an infatuation that is altogether unaccountable, continued to trifle away his time on shore, and did not attempt to recover the boat till the attack was begun."

As the expedition to find a better place for the ship had thus been unsuccessful, the captain determined to



try what could be done, where they lay; on the 14th, therefore, the ship was brought down by the stern, as far as they could effect it, and the carpenter, the only one of the crew who was in tolerable health, caulked the bows as far down as he could come at the bottom; and though he did not quite stop the leak, he very much reduced it. In the afternoon a fresh gale set right into the bay, which made the ship ride with her stern very near the shore, and they observed a great number of the natives sculking among the trees upon the beach, who probably expected that the wind should have forced the ship on shore.

The next morning the weather being fine, they veered the ship close in shore, with a spring upon their cable, so that they brought their broadside to bear upon the watering-place, for the protection of the boats that were to be employed there. As there was reason to suppose that the natives whom they had seen among the trees the night before, were not now far distant, the captain fired a couple of shot into the wood, before he sent the waterers ashore; he also sent the lieutenant in the cutter, well manned and armed, with the boat that carried them, and ordered him and his people to keep on board, and lie close to the beach to cover the watering-boat while she was loading, and to keep discharging musquets into the wood on each side of the party that were filling the water. These orders were well executed, the beach was steep, so that the boats could lie close to the people that were at work, and the lieutenant from the cutter fired three or four vollies of small arms into the woods before any of the men went on shore, and none of the natives appearing, the waterers landed and went to work. But notwithstanding all

these precautions, before they had been on shore a quarter of an hour, a flight of arrows was discharged among them, one of which dangerously wounded a man that was filling water, in the breast, and another stuck into a bareca, on which Mr. Pitcairn was sitting. The people on board the cutter immediately fired several vollies of small arms into that part of the wood from which the arrows came, and the captain recalled the boats that he might more effectually drive the Indians from their ambuscades with grape-shot from the ship's guns. When the boats and people were on board, they began to fire, and soon after saw about two hundred men rush out of the woods, and run along the beach with the utmost precipitation. They judged the coast to be now effectually cleared, but in a little time they perceived that a great number had got together on the westernmost point of the bay, where they probably thought themselves beyond their reach; to convince them therefore of the contrary, the captain ordered a gun to be fired at them with round shot; the ball just grazing the water rose again, and fell in the middle of them, upon which they dispersed with great hurry and confusion, and they saw no more of them. After this they watered without any farther molestation, but all the while their boats were on shore, they had the precaution to keep firing the ship's guns into the wood on both sides of them, and the cutter, which lay close on the beach, as she did before, kept up a constant fire of small arms, in platoons, at the same time. As they saw none of the natives during all this firing, they should have thought that none of them had ventured back into the wood, if some of the men had not reported that they heard groans from several parts of it, like those of dying persons.

Hitherto, though Captain Carteret had been long ill of an inflammatory and bilious disorder, he had been able to keep the deck; but this evening the symptoms became so much more threatening that he could keep up no longer, and he was for some time afterwards confined to his bed. The master was dying of the wounds he received in his quarrel with the Indians, the lieutenant also was very ill, the gunner and thirty of his men incapable of duty, among whom were seven of the most vigorous and healthy, that had been wounded with the master, and three of them mortally, and there was no hope of obtaining such refreshments as they most needed in this place. These were discouraging circumstances, and not only put an end to his hopes of prosecuting the voyage farther to the southward, but greatly dispirited the people; except himself, the master, and the lieutenant, there was nobody on board capable of navigating the ship home; the master was known to be a dying man, and the recovery of himself and the lieutenant was very doubtful. The captain would, however, have made a farther effort to obtain refreshments here, if he had been furnished with any toys, iron tools, or cutlery-ware, which might have enabled him to recover the good will of the natives, and establish a traffic with them for such necessaries as they could have furnished them with; but he had no such articles, and but very few others fit for an Indian trade, and not being in a condition to risk the loss of any more of the few men who were capable of doing duty, he weighed anchor at day break, on the 17th, and stood along the shore for that part of the island to which he had sent the cutter. To this island he had given the name of Egmont Island, in honour of the Earl; it certainly is the same to which



*View of the Swallow attacked by the Indians.*







the Spaniards have given the name of Santa Cruz, as appears by the accounts which their writers have given of it, and he called the place in which they had lain, Swallow Bay. From the easternmost point of this bay, which the captain called Swallow Point, to the north east point of the island which he called Cape Byron, is about seven miles east, and from the westernmost point of the bay, which he named Hanway's Point, to Cape Byron, is about ten or eleven miles. Between Swallow Point and Hanway's Point, in the bottom of the bay, there is a third point, which does not run out so far; and a little to the westward of this point is the best anchoring-place, but it is necessary to give it birth, as the ground near it is shoaly. When they were at anchor in this bay, Swallow Point bore E. by N. and Hanway's Point W. N. W. From this point there runs a reef, on which the sea breaks very high; the outer part of the reef bore N. W. by W. and an island which has the appearance of a volcano, was just over the breakers. Soon after they had passed Hanway's Point, they saw a small village, which stands upon the beach, and is surrounded by cocoa-nut trees. It is situated in a bay between Hanway's Point and another, to which the captain gave the name of Howe's Point. The distance from Hanway's Point to Howe's Point, is between four and five miles; close to the shore there is about thirty fathom of water, but in crossing the bay, at the distance of about two miles, they had no bottom. Having passed Howe's Point, they opened another bay, or harbour, which had the appearance of a deep lagoon, and which they called Carlisle Harbour. Over against the entrance of Carlisle Harbour, and north of the coast, they found a small island, which they called Portland's Island. On

the west side of this island there is a reef of rocks that runs to the main, the passage into the harbour therefore is on the east side of it, and runs in and out E. N. E. and W. S. W. ; it is about two cable's length wide, and has about eight fathom water. About four or five miles west from Portland's Island, is a fine, small, round harbour, just big enough to receive ships, which they called Byron's Harbour. When they were abreast of it, it bore from S. by E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. and the Volcano Island bore N. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. Their boat entered it, and found two runs of water, one fresh and the other salt ; by the run of salt water they judged that it had a communication with Carlisle Harbour. When they had proceeded about three leagues from the harbour, they opened the bay where the cutter had been attacked by the Indians, to which, for that reason, they gave the name of Bloody Bay. In this bay is a small rivulet of fresh water, and here they saw many houses regularly built ; close to the water-side stood one much longer than any of the rest, which seemed a kind of common hall, or council-house, and was neatly built and thatched. This was the building in which the men had been received who were on shore here with the master, and they said that both the sides and floor were lined with a kind of fine matting, and a great number of arrows, made up into bundles, were hung up in it ready for use. They reported also, that at this place there were many gardens, or plantations, which are enclosed by a fence of stone, and planted with cocoa-nut trees, bananas, plantains, yams, and other vegetables ; the cocoa-nut trees they saw from the ship, in great numbers, among the houses of the village. About three miles to the westward of this town, they saw another of considerable extent, in the front of

which, next to the water-side, there was a breast-work of stone, about four feet six inches high, not in a strait line, but in angles, like a fortification; and there is great reason to suppose, from the weapons of these people, and their military courage, which must in great measure be the effect of habit, that they have frequent wars among themselves. As they proceeded westward from this place, they found, at the distance of two or three miles, a small bight, forming a kind of bay, in which a river empties itself. Upon taking a view of this river from the mast head, it appeared to run very far into the country, and at the entrance at least, to be navigable for small vessels. This river they called Grenville's River, and to the westward of it is a point, to which they gave the name of Ferrers's Point. From this Point the land forms a large bay, and near it is a town of great extent, which seemed to swarm like a bee hive; an incredible multitude came out of it as the ship passed by, holding something in their hands which looked like a wisp of green grass, with which they seemed to stroke each other, at the same time dancing, or running in a ring. About seven miles to the westward of Point Ferrers, is another, that was called Carteret Point, from which a reef of rocks, that appears above water, runs out to the distance of about a cables' length. Upon this point they saw a large canoe, with an awning or shade built over it; and a little to the westward, another large town, fronted, and probably surrounded, with a breast-work of stone like the last; here also the people thronged to the beach as the ship was passing, and performed the same kind of circular dance. After a little time they launched several canoes, and made towards them; upon which they lay to, that they might

have time to come up, and they conceived great hopes that they should prevail upon them to come on board; but when they came near enough to have a more distinct view, they lay upon their paddles and gazed, but seemed to have no design of advancing farther, and therefore they made sail, and left them behind. About half a mile from Carteret Point, they had sixty fathom, with a bottom of sand coral. From this point the land trends away W. S. W. and S. W. forming a deep lagoon, at the mouth of which lies an island, that with the main forms two entrances into it; and which they called Trevanion's Island. This entrance is about two miles wide, and the lagoon, if there is anchorage in it, is certainly a fine harbour for shipping. After crossing the first entrance, and coming off the north west part of Trevanion's Island, which they called Cape Trevanion, they saw a great rippling, and therefore sent the boat off to sound; they had, however, no bottom with fifty fathom, the rippling being caused only by the meeting of the tides. Having hauled round this Cape; they found the land to trend to the southward, and continued to stand along the shore, till they opened the western passage into the lagoon between Trevanion's Island and the main. In this place, both the main and the island appeared to be one continued town, and the inhabitants were innumerable. They sent a boat to examine this entrance or passage, and found the bottom to be coral and rock, with very irregular soundings over it. As soon as the natives saw the boat leave the ship, they sent off several armed canoes to attack her; the first that came within bow-shot discharged her arrows at the people on board, who being ready, fired a volley, by which one of the Indians was killed, and another

wounded ; at the same time they fired a great gun from the ship, loaded with grape shot, among them, upon which they all pulled back to the shore with great precipitation, except the canoe which began the attack, and that being secured by the boat's crew, with the wounded man in her, was brought to the ship. Captain Carteret immediately ordered the Indian to be taken on board, and the surgeon to examine his wounds ; it appeared that one shot had gone through his head, and that his arm was broken by another ; the surgeon was of opinion that the wound in his head was mortal. He therefore ordered him to be put again into his canoe, and, notwithstanding his condition, he paddled away towards the shore. He was a young man, with a woolly head, like that of the negroes, and a small beard, but he was well featured, and not so black as the natives of Guinea ; he was of the common stature, and, like all the rest of the people whom they had seen upon the island, quite naked. His canoe was very small, and of rude workmanship, being nothing more than part of the trunk of a tree made hollow ; it had, however, an outrigger, but none of them had sails. They found this place to be the western extremity of the island on the north side, and that it lay in exactly the same latitude as the eastern extremity on the same side. The distance between them is about fifty miles due east and west, and a strong current sets westward along the shore.

Captain Carteret was still confined to his bed, and it was with infinite regret that he gave up the hopes of obtaining refreshments at this place, especially as the people told him they saw hogs and poultry in great plenty, as they sailed along the shore, with cocoa-nut trees, plantains, bananas, and a variety of other vegetable pro-



ductions, which would soon have restored them the health and vigour they had lost ; but no friendly intercourse with the natives could now be expected, and he was not in a situation to obtain what he wanted by force. Their little strength was every minute becoming less ; the captain was not in a condition to pursue the voyage to the southward, and was in danger of losing the monsoon, so that no time was now to be lost ; he therefore gave orders to steer northward, hoping to refresh at the country which Dampier has called Nova Britannia. The captain gave the general name of Queen Charlotte's Islands to the whole cluster, as well to those that he did not see distinctly, as to those that he did ; and gave several of them particular names as he approached them. To the southermost of the two, which when they first discovered land were right ahead, he gave the name of Lord Howe's Island, and the other was Egmont Island, already mentioned. The east sides of these two islands, which lie exactly in a line with each other, about N. by W. and S. by E. including the passage between them, extend about eleven leagues, and the passage is about four miles broad ; both of them appear to be fertile, and have a pleasant appearance, being covered with tall trees, of a beautiful verdure. Lord Howe's Island, though more flat and even than the other, is notwithstanding high land. About thirteen leagues W. N. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. by compass, from Cape Byron, there is an island of a stupendous height, and a conical figure. The top of it is shaped like a funnel, from which they saw smoke issue, though no flame ; it is, however, certainly a volcano, and therefore was called Volcano Island. To a long flat island that when Howe's and Egmont's Islands were right ahead, bore

N. W. they gave the name of Keppel's Island. The largest of two others to the S. E. they called Lord Edgcumb's Island, the small one Ourry's Island. Edgcumb's Island has a fine pleasant appearance.

The inhabitants of Edgcumb's Island are extremely nimble, vigorous, and active, and seem to be almost as well qualified to live in the water as upon the land, for they were in and out of their canoes almost every minute. The canoes that came out from the west end of the island, were all like that which was brought on board, and might probably, upon occasion, carry about a dozen men, though three or four manage them with amazing dexterity; they saw, however, others of a larger size upon the beach, with awnings or shades over them. They got two of their bows, and a bundle of their arrows, from the canoe that was taken with the wounded man; and with these weapons they do execution at an incredible distance. One of them went through the boat's wash-board and dangerously wounded a midshipman in the thigh. Their arrows were pointed with flint, and they saw among them no appearance of any metal. The country in general is woody and mountainous, with many vallies intermixed; several small rivers flow from the interior part of the country into the sea, and there are many harbours upon the coast. They made sail from this island in the evening of the 18th, with a fresh trade wind from the eastward, and a few squalls at times. At first they only hauled up W. N. W. for the captain was not without hope of falling in with some other islands, where they might be more fortunate than they had been at those they left, before they got the length of Nova Britannia.

On the 20th they discovered a small, flat, low island, and got up with it in the evening; it lies in latitude  $7^{\circ} 56'$  S. longitude  $158^{\circ} 56'$  E. and they gave it the name of Gower's Island. To their great mortification they found no anchorage here, and could procure only a few cocoa-nuts from the inhabitants, who were much the same kind of people that they had seen at Egmont, in exchange for nails, and such trifles as they had; they promised, by signs, to bring them more the next day, and they kept off and on all night; the night was extremely dark, and the next morning, at day-break, they found that a current had set considerably to the southward of the island, and brought them within sight of two more. They were situated nearly east and west of each other, and were distant about two miles. That to the eastward is much smaller, and this they called Simpson's Island; to the other, which is lofty, and has a stately appearance, they gave the name of Carteret's Island. Both these islands were right to windward of them, and they bore down to Gower's Island. It is about two leagues and a half long on the western side, which makes in bays; the whole is well wooded, and many of the trees are cocoa-nut. They found here a considerable number of the Indians, with two boats or canoes, which they supposed to belong to Carteret's Island, and to have brought the people hither only to fish. They sent the boat on shore, which the natives endeavoured to cut off, and hostilities being thus commenced, they seized their canoe, in which they found about an hundred cocoa-nuts, which were very acceptable; they saw some turtle near the beach, but were not fortunate enough to take any of them. The canoe, or boat, was large enough to carry eight or ten men, and

was very neatly built with planks, well jointed; it was adorned with shell-work, and figures rudely painted, and the seams were covered with a substance somewhat like black putty, but it appeared to be of a better consistence. The people were armed with bows, arrows, and spears; the spears and arrows were pointed with flint. By some signs which they made, pointing to their musquets, it appeared they were not wholly unacquainted with fire-arms. They are much the same kind of people as they had seen at Egmont Island, and like them, were quite naked: but their canoes were of a very different structure, and a much larger size, though they did not discover that any of them had sails.

From the time of their leaving Egmont Island, they had observed a current setting strongly to the southward, and in the neighbourhood of these islands they found its force greatly increased; this determined the captain when he sailed from Gower's Island to steer N. W. fearing they might otherwise fall in with the main land too far to the southward; for if they had got into any gulph or deep bay, their crew was so sickly, and their ship so bad, it would have been impossible to have got out again.

About eight o'clock in the morning of the 22d, as they were continuing their course with a fine fresh gale, Patrick Dwyar, one of the marines, who was doing something over the ship's quarter, by some accident missed his hold and fell into the sea; they instantly threw overboard the canoe which they had seized at Gower's Island, brought the ship to, and hoisted out the cutter with all possible expedition, but the poor fellow, though remarkably strong and healthy, sunk at

once, and they saw him no more. They took the canoe on board again, but she had received so much damage by striking against one of the guns, as the people were hoisting her overboard, that they were obliged to cut her up.

In the night of the 24th, they fell in with nine islands, which stretch nearly N. W. by W. and S. E. by E. about fifteen leagues, and lie in latitude  $4^{\circ} 36'$  S. longitude  $154^{\circ} 17'$  E. according to the ship's account. One of these islands is of considerable extent, the other eight are scarcely better than large rocks; but though they are low and flat, they are well covered with wood, and abound with inhabitants. The people are black, and woolly headed, like the negroes of Africa; their weapons are bows and arrows; and they have large canoes which they navigate with a sail, one of which came near them, but would not venture on board. They went to the northward of these islands, and steered W. by S. with a strong south-westerly current. At eleven o'clock at night, they fell in with another island of a considerable extent, flat, green, and of a pleasant appearance; they saw none of its inhabitants, but it appeared by the many fires which were burning in the night to be well peopled. It lies in latitude  $4^{\circ} 50'$  S. bears west fifteen leagues from the northermost of the Nine Islands, and they called it Sir Charles Hardy's Island.

At day-break the next morning, they discovered another large high island, which, rising in three considerable hills, had, at a distance, the appearance of three islands. They gave it the name of Winchelsea's Island; it is distant from Sir Charles Hardy's Island about ten leagues, in the direction of S. by E. They had here the



wind squally, with unsettled weather, and a very strong westerly current.

On the 26th, they saw another large island to the northward. Soon after high land appeared to the westward, which proved to be Nova Britannia, and as they approached it they found a very strong S. S. westerly current, setting at the rate of no less than thirty-two miles a day. The next day, having only light winds, a north-westerly current set them into a deep bay or gulph, which Dampier called St. George's Bay.

On the 28th they anchored in a bay near a little island at the distance of about three leagues to the N. W. of Cape St. George, which was called Wallis's Island. The latitude of this Cape was found to be about  $5^{\circ}$  S. and its longitude, by account,  $152^{\circ} 19'$  E. In the afternoon the cutter was sent to examine the coast, and the other boat to get some cocoa-nuts, and haul the seine. The people in this boat caught no fish, but they brought on board about one hundred and fifty cocoa-nuts, which were distributed to the men at the surgeon's discretion. They had seen some of the turtle as they were coming into the bay, and hoping that some of them might repair to the island in the night, especially as it was sandy, barren, and uninhabited, like the places these animals most frequent, a few men were sent on shore to watch for them, but they returned the next morning, without success. They anchored here only to wait till the boats could find a fit place for their purpose, and several very good harbours being discovered not far distant, they now endeavoured to weigh anchor, but, with the united strength of their whole company, were not able; this was an alarming proof of their debility, and with heavy hearts they had recourse

to an additional purchase; with this assistance, and their utmost efforts, they got the anchor just clear of the bottom, but the ship casting in ashore, it almost immediately hooked again in foul ground. Their task was now to begin again, and though all hands that were able to move applied their utmost force the whole remaining part of the day, with the greatest purchase they could make, they were not able to stir it; they were very unwilling to cut the cable, for though it was much worn, they could at this time ill sustain the loss of it, as they intended to make small cord, which they much wanted, of the best part of it. They therefore desisted for the night, and on the 30th, having a little recruited their strength they were more successful; they got the anchor up, but found it so much injured as to be wholly unserviceable, the palm being broken.

From this place they sailed to a little cove about three or four miles distant, to which they gave the name of English Cove; here they anchored, and immediately began to get wood and water, which they found in great plenty, besides ballast; the boat was sent out every day to different places with the seine, but though there was plenty of fish, they were able to catch very little; a misfortune which was probably owing in part to the rockiness of the beach, and perhaps in some degree also to their want of skill; they plied this labour day and night, notwithstanding the want of success, and at the same time had recourse to the hook and the line, but to their great mortification not a single fish would take the bait. They saw a few turtle, but they were so shy that they could not catch one of them; here therefore they were condemned to the curse of Tantalus, perpetually in the sight of what their appetites most impor-

unately craved, and perpetually disappointed in their attempts to reach it. They got, however, from the rocks at low water, a few rock oysters, and cockles of a very large size ; and from the shore some cocoa-nuts, and the upper part of the tree that bears them, which is called the cabbage ; this cabbage is a white, crisp, juicy substance, which, eaten raw, tastes somewhat like a chesnut, but when boiled is superior to the best parsnip ; they cut it small into the broth that they made for their portable soup, which was afterwards thickened with oatmeal, and made a most comfortable mess ; for each of these cabbages, however, they were forced to cut down a tree, and it was with regret that they destroyed, in the parent stock, so much fruit, which perhaps is the most powerful antiscorbutic in the world ; but necessity has no law. This supply of fresh vegetables, and especially the milk, or rather the water of the nut, recovered their sick very fast. They also received great benefit and pleasure from the fruit of a tall tree, that resembles a plum, and particularly that which in the West Indies is called the Jamaica plum ; it has a pleasant tartish taste, but is a little woody, probably only for want of culture ; these plums were not plenty, so that having the two qualities of a dainty, scarcity and excellence, it is no wonder that they were held in the highest estimation.

The shore about this place is rocky, and the country high and mountainous, but covered with trees of various kinds, some of which are of an enormous growth. The nutmeg tree was in great plenty, but the nuts did not indeed appear to be the best sort, perhaps owing partly to their growing wild, and partly to their being too much in the shade of taller trees. The cocoa-nut

tree is in great perfection, but does not abound. Here are, the captain believes, all the different kinds of palm, with the beetle-nut tree, various species of the aloe, canes, bamboos, and rattans, with many trees, shrubs, and plants, altogether unknown to him ; but no esculent vegetable of any kind. The woods abound with pigeons, doves, rooks, parrots, and a large bird with black plumage, that makes a noise somewhat like the barking of a dog ; with many others. They saw no quadruped but two of a small size, that they took for dogs ; the carpenter and another man got a transient glimpse of them in the woods as they were cutting spars for the ship's use, and said they were very wild, and ran away the moment they saw them with great swiftness. They saw centipedes, scorpions, and a few serpents of different kinds, but no inhabitants. They fell in, however, with several deserted habitations, and by the shells that were scattered about them, and seemed not long to have been taken out of the water, and some sticks half burnt, the remains of a fire, there is reason to conclude that the people had but just left the place when they arrived.

While they lay here, having cleared and lightened the ship, they heeled her so as to come at her leak, which the carpenter stopped as well as he could ; they found the sheathing greatly decayed, and the bottom much eaten by the worms, but they payed it as far as they could get at it with a mixture of hot pitch and tar boiled together. The carpenter also cut down many spars, for studding-sail booms, having but few left of those which he had brought from England.

English Cove lies N. E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. three or four miles from Wallis's Island ; there is a small shoal on the star-





*Captain Cartwright taking possession of English Cove.*



board hand going in, which will be easily seen by the sea's breaking upon it. The water ebbs and flows once in four and twenty hours; the flood came in about nine or ten o'clock, and it was high water between three and four in the afternoon, after which it ebbed all night, and was low water about six in the morning. The water rises and falls between eight and nine feet, sometimes more, sometimes less. They anchored here with their best bower in twenty-seven fathom water, with a bottom of sand and mud; they veered into the cove a cable and a half from the anchor, moored head and stern with the stream anchor, and steadied with hawsers on each bow; the ship lay then in ten fathom, at the distance of a cables' length from the shore at the bottom of the Cove, Wallis's Point bearing S. W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. distant about three or four miles. At this place there is plenty of excellent wood and water, and good shingle ballast.

On the 7th of September, the captain weighed anchor, but before he sailed, he took possession of this country, with all its islands, bays, ports, and harbours, for his Majesty George the Third, King of Great Britain; and they nailed upon a high tree a piece of board, faced with lead, on which was engraved the English Union, with the name of the ship, and her commander, the name of the Cove, and the time of her coming in and sailing out of it. They sailed from English Cove with the land breeze early in the morning, and in the evening secured the ship abreast of a grove, where cocoa-nuts had been previously gathered, and at very little distance from the shore. Here they procured above a thousand cocoa-nuts, and as many cabbages as they could use while they were good. Having weighed an-

chor they quitted this station, which was much the best that had been their lot during the whole run from the Streight of Magellan, on the 9th, in the morning, at day-break, with a light breeze from the land. To this place they gave the name of Carteret's Harbour; it is about W. N. W. four leagues from English Cove, and formed by two islands and the main; the largest, which is to the N. W. they called Cocoa-Nut Island, and the other, which is to S. E. they called Leigh's Island. Between these two islands there is a shoal water, and each of them forms an entrance into the harbour; the south east or weather entrance is formed by Leigh's Island, and in this there is a rock that appears above water, to which they gave the name of Booby Rock; the passage is between the rock and the island, nor is the rock dangerous, there being deep water close to it. The north west, or lee entrance, is formed by Cocoa-Nut Island, and this is the best, because there is good anchorage in it, the water in the other being too deep; they entered the harbour by the south east passage, and went out of it by the north-west. At the south-east end of the harbour there is a large cove, which is secure from all winds, and fit to haul a ship into. Into this cove a river seemed to empty itself, but their boats did not examine it. In the north-west part of the harbour there is another cove, which their boat did examine, and from which she brought very good water; this also is fit for a ship to haul into, and very convenient for wooding and watering; she may lie in any depth from thirty to five fathom, and at any distance from the shore, with a bottom of soft mud. The harbour runs about S. E. by S. and N. W. by N. and is about three miles long, and four cables' length broad. They anchored in thirty fa-

thom, near the north-west entrance, and abreast of the tree in Cocoa-Nut Island.

When they got about four leagues off the land, they met with a strong gale at E. S. E. a direction just contrary to that which would have favoured their getting round the land, and doubling Cape Saint Maria. They found at the same time a strong current, setting them to the N. W. into a deep bay or gulph, which Dampier calls Saint George's Bay, and which lies between Cape St. George and Cape Orford. As it was impossible to get round the land, against both the wind and current, and follow the track of Dampier, the captain was under the necessity of attempting a passage to the westward, by this gulph, and the current gave them hopes that he should succeed. When he had got, therefore, about five miles to the south-west of Cocoa-Nut Island, he steered to the N. W. and the N. N. W. as the land trends, and before it was dark, found, what has been called St. George's bay, is a channel divided by a pretty large island, which he called the Duke of York's Island, and some smaller islands that were scattered about it. On the southermost side of the main, or the largest of the two islands that are divided by the channel or streight, which our navigator left in possession of its ancient name, New Britain, there is some high land, and three remarkable hills close to each other, which he called the Mother and Daughters. The mother is the middlemost and largest, and behind them they saw a vast column of smoke, so that probably one of them is a volcano; they are easily seen in clear weather at the distance of twenty leagues, and will then, by those who do not know them, be taken for islands; they seem to lie far inland, and the Mother bears about west from



the Duke of York's Island. To the east of these hills there is a point making like a cape land, which the captain called Cape Palliser ; and another to the westward which he called Cape Stephens. Cape Stephens is the northermost part of New Britain. North of this Cape is an island, which he called the Isle of Man. Cape Palliser and Cape Stephens bears about N. W. and S. E. of each other ; and between them is a bay, the land of which near the water side low, pleasant, and level, and gradually rises as it retires towards the Mother and Daughters, into very lofty hills, in general covered with vast woods, but having many clear spots like plantations intermixed. Upon this part of the country they saw many fires in the night, and have therefore reason to suppose that it is well inhabited. The Duke of York's Island lies between the two points, Cape Palliser and Cape Stephens. As it was not safe to attempt either of the passages into which the Streight was divided by this island in the dark, they brought to for the night, and kept sounding, but had no ground, with one hundred and forty fathom. The Streight here, including the two passages, is about fifteen leagues broad. The land of the Duke of York's Island is level, and has a delightful appearance ; inland it is covered with lofty woods, and near the water side are the houses of the natives, which stand not far from each other, among groves of cocoa-nut trees, so that the whole forms a prospect the most beautiful and romantic that can be imagined. They saw many of their canoes, which are very neatly made, and in the morning of the 10th, soon after the captain made sail, some of them came off towards the ship, but as they had a fresh gale at that time they could not stay for them. The latitude



of this island is 4, 9' S. longitude 151° 20' E. and it is 25 leagues distant from Cape George. As they coasted not New Britain, but the northermost coast of the Streight, they passed through the passage that is formed by that coast, and the corresponding side of the Duke of York's Island, which is about eight leagues broad, and may be considered as the First Narrow of the Streight; and then steering N. W. by W. all night, they found at day-break that they had lost sight of the southermost land, or New Britain, and having now ascertained the supposed bay to be a Streight, the captain called it St. George's Channel, and to the northern island he gave the name of Nova Hibernia, or New Ireland. The weather being hazy, with a strong gale and sudden gusts, he continued to steer along the coast of New Ireland at about the distance of six leagues from the shore, till he came off the west end of it, and then, altering their course, he steered W. N. W. he could plainly perceive that they were set along the shore by a strong westerly current. At noon they found, by observation, that they were much to the northward of the log; but as it was impossible the current could set due north, as that would be right against the land, he was obliged, for the correction of his account, to allow no less than four and twenty miles W. N. W. which is nearly as the land lies along the shore. At this time they had about half a point east variation; and at night they discovered a fine large island, forming a streight or passage with New Ireland. As it was very dark and squally, with rain, they brought to, not knowing to what danger the navigation of this streight might expose them. The night was tempestuous, with much thunder and lightning, but about two in the morning of the 12th, the weather

cleared ; the gusts settled into a light breeze, and the moon shone very bright. At this time, therefore, they made sail again, and found a strong current setting them to the westward, through the passage to the Second Narrow, which is about five leagues wide. The island, which has a pleasant appearance, and is very populous, the captain called Sandwich Island, in honor of the Earl, then First Lord of the Admiralty ; it is larger than the Duke of York's Island, and there seems to be some good bays and harbours upon the coast. On the north part of it there is a remarkable peak, like a sugar loaf ; and opposite to it, upon the coast of New Ireland, there is just such another ; they are distant about five leagues, in the direction of S. by E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. and N. by W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. All the while they lay to off this island, they heard an incessant noise in the night, like the beating of a drum ; and being becalmed just as they got through the Streight, ten canoes put off from New Ireland, with about 150 men on board, and rowed towards the ship ; they came near enough to exchange some trifles with them, which were conveyed at the end of a long stick, but none of them would venture on board. They seemed to prefer such iron as they gave them to every thing else, though none of it was manufactured except nails ; for, as was observed before, they had no cutlery ware on board. The canoes were very long and narrow, with an outrigger, and some of them were very neatly made ; one of them could not be less than ninety feet long, for it was very little shorter than the ship ; it was, notwithstanding, formed of a single tree ; it had some carved ornaments about it, and was rowed or paddled by three and thirty men ; they saw no appearance of sails. The people are black,

and woolly-headed, like negroes, but have not the flat nose and thick lips ; and they thought them much the same people as the inhabitants of Egmont's Island ; like them, they were all stark naked, except a few ornaments made of shells, upon their arms and legs. They had, however, adopted a practice, without which none of their belles and beaux are supposed to be completely drest, for the hair, or rather the wool upon their heads, was very abundantly powdered with white powder ; the fashion of wearing powder, therefore, is probably of higher antiquity than it is generally supposed to be, as well as of more extensive influence ; it is indeed carried farther among these people than among any of the inhabitants of Europe, for they powder not only their heads but their beards too. Their heads, however, were decorated with more showy ornaments, for most of them had, just above one ear, stuck a feather, which appeared to have been taken from the tail of the common dunghill cock ; so that these gentlemen are not without poultry for the table. They were armed with long spears, and long sticks or poles, like the quarter-staff, but they did not see any bows and arrows among them ; probably they might have had them on board, and thought proper to keep them out of sight. The captain kept everybody at their quarters while they were hovering about the ship, and he observed that they had a very watchful eye upon their guns, as if they apprehended danger from them ; so that possibly they are not wholly unacquainted with the effect of fire arms. They had fishing nets with them, which, as well as their cordage, seemed to be very well made. After they had been some time with them, a breeze sprung up, and they returned

to the shore. The peak upon Sandwich Island lies in latitude  $3^{\circ} 53'$  S. longitude  $149^{\circ} 17'$  E.

After the Indians had left them, they steered nearly west, and soon after saw a point of land, which proved to be the south-west extremity of New Ireland, to which the captain gave the name of Cape Byron; it lies in latitude  $2^{\circ} 30'$  S. longitude  $149^{\circ} 2'$  E. Over against the coast of New Ireland, to the westward of Cape Byron, lies a fine large island, to which he gave the name of New Hanover. Between this island and New Ireland, there is a streight or passage, which turns away to the N. E. In this passage lie several small islands, upon one of which there is a remarkable peak; this island Captain Carteret called Byron's Island, and the passage or streight, he called Byron's Streight. The land of New Hanover is high; it is finely covered with trees, among which are many plantations, and the whole has a most beautiful appearance. The south-west point of it, which is a high bluff point, he called Queen Charlotte's Foreland, in honour of her Majesty. This foreland, and the land about it, is remarkable for a great number of little hummocks or hills, but night coming on, with thick weather, hard squalls, and much rain, they could not see more of it distinctly enough to describe its appearance.

They steered westward all night, and in the morning of the 13th, the weather being still thick, their view of New Hanover was very imperfect; but they saw, about eight leagues to the westward of it, six or seven small islands, which the captain called the Duke of Portland's Islands, two of which are pretty large. Captain Carteret now perceived by the swell of the sea that they were clear of all the land, and he found St. George's

Channel to be a much better and shorter passage, whether from the eastward or the westward, than round all the land and the islands to the northward; the distress therefore which pushed him upon this discovery, may probably be, in its consequences, of great advantage to future navigators, especially as there can be no doubt but that refreshments of every kind may easily be procured from the natives who inhabit either of the coasts of the channel, or the islands that lie near them, for beads, ribbons, looking-glasses, and especially iron tools and cutlery wares, of which, they are immoderately fond, and with which, to their great misfortune, they were not furnished.

Queen Charlotte's Foreland, the south-west part of New Hanover, lies in latitude  $2^{\circ} 29'$  S. longitude  $148^{\circ} 27'$  E.; and the middle of Portland's Islands, in latitude  $2^{\circ} 27'$  S. longitude  $148^{\circ} 3'$  E. The length of this streight or channel, from Cape St. George to Cape Byron, the south-west extremity of New Ireland, is above eighty leagues; the distance from Cape Byron to Queen Charlotte's Foreland is about twelve leagues, and from the Foreland to Portland's Islands about eight leagues; so that the whole length of St. George's Channel is about one hundred leagues, or three hundred miles.

Though they cleared the Streight in the morning of the 13th of September, they had no observation of the sun till the 15th, which the captain could not but greatly regret, as it prevented his being so exact in his latitude and longitude as might be expected. The description also of the country, its productions and people, would have been much more full and circumstantial, if he had not been so much enfeebled and dispirited by sickness, as almost to sink under the duty that for want of



officers devolved upon him, being obliged, when he was scarcely able to crawl, to keep watch, and share other duties with his lieutenant, whose health also was greatly impaired.

---

---

---

*CHAP. III.*

---

---

Passage from St. George's Channel to the Island of Mindanao—Account of several Islands—Incidents by the Way—Account of Mindanao and the adjoining Islands—Passage to the Island of Celebes—Attacked by a Pirate—His Vessel sunk—Other Incidents.

AS soon as they had cleared St. George's Channel, they steered westward, and the next day discovered land bearing W. N. W. and hauled up for it; it proved to be an island of considerable extent, and soon afterwards they saw another to the north-east of it, but this appeared to be little more than a large rock above water. As they proceeded to the westward, they discovered more land, consisting of many islands lying to the southward of the large one which they had first discovered. As the nights were now moonlight, they kept on till eleven o'clock, and the lieutenant, who was then officer of the watch, finding that the course they were steering would carry them among them, and not being willing to waken the Captain till it was his turn to watch, hauled off S. by E. and S. S. E. He came upon deck about midnight, and at one in the morning of the 15th, perceiving that they were off them, he bore away

again to the westward with an easy sail; the islands, however, were not far distant, and about six o'clock, a considerable number of canoes, with several hundred people on board, came off, and paddled toward the ship; one of them, with seven men on board, came near enough to hail them, and made them several signs which they could not perfectly understand, but repeated, as near as they could, to shew that according as they acted, so would they; however, the better to bespeak their good-will, and invite them on board, they held up to them several of the few trifles they had; upon this the Indians drew nearer to the ship, and the captain flattered himself that they were coming on board; but on the contrary, as soon as they came within reach of them they threw their lances with great force, where they stood thickest on the deck. As the captain thought it better to prevent a general attack, in which, as the number would be more, the mischief would be greater, and having now no doubt of their hostile intentions, he fired some musquets, and one of the swivel guns, upon which some of them being killed or wounded, they rowed off and joined the other canoes, of which there were twelve or fourteen, with several hundred men on board. He then brought to, waiting for the issue, and had the satisfaction to see, that, after having long consulted together, they made for the shore; that he might still farther intimidate them, and more effectually prevent their return, he fired a round shot from one of his six-pounders, so as to fall into the water beyond them; this seemed to have a good effect, for they not only used their paddles more nimbly, but hoisted sail still standing towards the shore. Soon after, however, several more canoes put off from

another part of the island, and came towards them very fast ; they stopped at about the same distance as the others had done, and one of them also in the same manner came forward ; to the people on board this vessel they made all the signs of friendship they could devise, shewing them every thing they had which they thought would please them, opening their arms, and inviting them on board ; but their rhetoric was to no effect, for as soon as they came within a cast of the ship, they poured in a shower of darts and lances, which, however, did no harm. They returned the assault by firing some musquets, and one man being killed, the rest precipitately leaped into the sea, and swimming to the others, who waited at a distance, all returned together from whence they came. As soon as the canoe was deserted, they got out their boat and brought it on board ; it was fully fifty feet long, though one of the smallest that came against them ; it was very rudely made out of one tree, but had an out-rigger. They found in it six fine fish, and a turtle, some yams, one cocoa nut, and a bag full of a small kind of apple or plum, of a sweetish taste and farinaceous substance ; it had a flattish kernel, and was wholly different from every thing they had seen either before or since ; it was eatable raw, but much better boiled, or roasted in the embers ; they found also two large earthen pots, shaped somewhat like a jug, with a wide mouth, but without handles, and a considerable quantity of matting, which these people use both for sails and awning, spreading it over bent sticks, much in the same manner as the tilts of the London wherries. From the contents of this vessel they judged that it had been fishing, and they observed that the people had a fire on board, with one of their pots on it, in which they

were boiling their provisions. When they had satisfied their curiosity by examining it, they cut it up for fire-wood.

These Indians were the same kind of people that they had seen before on the coast of New Ireland, and at Egmont Island; they were of a very dark copper colour, nearly black, with woolly heads. They chew beetle-nut, and go quite naked, except the rude ornaments of shells strung together, which they wear round their legs and arms; they were also powdered like the last visitors, and had besides, their faces painted with white streaks; but as far as they could see, they had no beards. Their lances were pointed with a kind of bluish flint.

Having disengaged themselves from this fierce and unfriendly people, they pursued their course along the other islands, which are between twenty and thirty in number, and of considerable extent; one in particular would alone make a large kingdom. The captain called them the Admiralty Islands, and would have been glad to have examined them, if his ship had been in a better condition, and he had been provided with such articles as are proper for an Indian trade, especially as their appearance is very inviting; they are clothed with the most beautiful verdure; the woods are lofty and luxuriant, interspersed with spots that have been cleared for plantations, groves of cocoa-nut trees, and houses of the natives, who seem to be very numerous. Nothing would be more easy than to establish an amicable intercourse with them, as they would soon be sensible that the superiority of the English would render contest vain, and traffic advantageous. The middle of the largest is supposed to lie in latitude  $2^{\circ} 18' S.$  longitude  $146^{\circ} 44'$



E. and at the distance of five and thirty leagues from Queen Charlotte's Foreland in New Hanover, in the direction of W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. On the south side of this island, there is a small one, which rises conically in a high peak. The latitude of this peak is  $2^{\circ} 27' S$  and it lies five degrees and an half westward of Cape St. George in New Ireland. As they run along the south side of the large island, they found it to be eighteen leagues long, in the direction of east and west; how far it runs to the northward is not known but by its appearance there is reason to suppose a very considerable distance. It is very probable that these islands produce many valuable articles of trade, particularly spices, especially as they lie in the same climate and latitude as the Malaccas, and as they found the nutmeg tree in a soil comparatively rocky and barren upon the coast of New Ireland.

Having passed these islands, they continued their course W. by N. with a fine eastern breeze, and smooth water. On the 16th, in the morning, they found the variation, by a medium of several azimuths, to be  $6^{\circ} 19' S$ . and longitude  $145^{\circ} 43' E$ . by observation. The captain was surprised to find the variation on this side the land of New Britain and New Ireland so much, as they had found it gradually decreasing during their progress to the N. W. but he recollected that about two years before he had found nearly the same variation in this meridian, about the island of Tinian.

On the 19th, in the evening, they discovered two small islands, both low land, level, and green; one of them they saw only from the main-top gallant-mast-head, this they called Durour's Island. Its latitude is about  $1^{\circ} 14'$  or  $16' S$ . its longitude  $173^{\circ} 21' E$ . The other island, which is called Maty's Island, they coasted dur-

ing the night, and saw the inhabitants, in great numbers, run along the beach, abreast of the ship, with lights; the side along which they sailed seemed to be about six miles in length, E. by N. and W. by S. As it was dark they could see no more of it, and having a fine breeze, which they could not afford to lose, they kept on. Its latitude is about  $1^{\circ} 45' S.$  and its longitude about  $143^{\circ} 2' E.$ ; the variation here was  $4^{\circ} 40' E.$  and they found a strong north-westerly current. They had now fresh gales and squalls, with rain, the wind blowing very unsteadily from E. S. E. to E. N. E. till Tuesday the 22d, when it became variable. Their latitude was then  $55' S.$  longitude  $140^{\circ} 5' E.$ ; the variation was  $4^{\circ} 40' E.$

On the 24th, they saw two small islands to the southwest, but it being calm, with light airs, and a strong westerly current, they could not get nearer to them than four or five leagues; they had a green, pleasant appearance, and were well covered with trees; they saw no inhabitants. They run about N. W. by W. S. E. by E. One is about three miles long, and the other about six; the passage between them appeared to be about two miles broad. They lie in latitude  $22' S.$  longitude  $138^{\circ} 39' E.$  and the captain gave them the name of Stephen's Islands. They kept steering N. W. by W. with a light variable wind, and a strong north-west current.

The next day they saw land ahead, which proved to be three small islands; and before it was dark, they got pretty near them. Several canoes soon came off, filled with the natives, who, after making signs of peace, came on board without the least appearance of fear or distrust; they had nothing with them but a few cocoa-nuts,

which they sold with great joy for a few pieces of an iron hoop; they soon found that they were not unacquainted with that metal, which they called Parram, and they made them understand by signs, that a ship like theirs sometimes touched at their islands for refreshment. The captain gave one of them three pieces of an old iron hoop, each about four inches long, which threw him into an extasy little short of distraction; the captain could not but sympathize in his joy, nor observe, without great pleasure, the changes of countenance, and extravagance of gesture, by which it was expressed. All these people indeed appeared to be more fond of iron than any they had seen before, and it was evident that for iron tools they might have purchased every thing upon the islands which they could have brought away. They are of the Indian copper colour, the first of that complexion, that they had seen in these parts, with fine long black hair, and little beards, for they observed that they were continually plucking the hair from their chin and upper lip by the roots. Their features are pleasing, and their teeth remarkably white and even; they were of a common stature, but nimble, vigorous, and active in a surprising degree, running up to the mast-head much faster than the sailors. Their disposition was free and open, they ate and drank whatever was given them, went without hesitation into every part of the ship, and were as familiar and merry with the crew as if they had been of long and intimate acquaintance. They were not like the people on all the other islands that they had visited, quite naked, though they had only a slight covering for the waist, which consisted of a narrow piece of fine matting. Their canoes were very well and neatly made, having a hollow tree

for the bottom, and planks for the sides, with a sail of fine matting, and an outrigger, their ropes and netting were also very good. They urged our navigators strongly to go on shore, offering to leave an equal number of their own people behind, as a pledge of their safe return; and indeed Captain Carteret would gladly have consented if it had been in his power, but a strong westerly current hurried him to so great a distance, that he had no opportunity to seek for anchorage, and night coming on, they pursued their course. When their visitors perceived this, one of them insisted upon going with them, and, notwithstanding all that the captain and his companions could say or do, obstinately refused to go on shore. As Captain Carteret thought it possible that this man might be the means of their making some useful discovery, he did not put him ashore by force, but indulged him in his desire; they learned from him that there were other islands to the northward, the inhabitants of which he said had iron, and always killed his countrymen when they could catch them out at sea. It was with great concern that the captain perceived this poor fellow, whom he called Joseph Freewill, from his readiness to go with them, become gradually sick after he had been some time at sea; he lived till they got to the island of Celebes, and there died. As the islands from which the captain had taken him were very small and low, the largest being not more than five miles in compass, he was surprised to see with how many of the productions of Celebes he was acquainted; beside the cocoa-nut and palm, he knew the beetle-nut and the lime, and the moment he got a bread-fruit, he went to the fire and roasted it in the embers. He made them understand also, that in his country, they had plenty of

fish and turtle in their season. It is, however, very probable, notwithstanding the number of people who subsist upon these islands; that they have no fresh water but what falls in rain; how they catch and preserve it, the captain had no opportunity to learn, but he never met with a spring in a spot so small and low, and in such a spot he believes no spring was ever found. The largest of these islands, which the natives call Pegan, and to which he gave the name of Freewill Island, lies fifty minutes north of the line, and in  $137^{\circ} 51'$  east longitude. They are all surrounded by a reef of rocks. The chart of these islands he drew from the Indian's description, who delineated them with chalk upon the deck, and ascertained the depth of water by stretching his arms as a fathom.

They now steered N. W. by N. to get from under the sun, and had light winds at E. S. E. with which almost any ship but the Swallow would have made good way, but with every possible advantage she went at a heavy rate. They now found their variation begin to decrease.

On the 28th, being in latitude  $2^{\circ} 53'$  N. longitude  $136^{\circ} 10'$  E. they fell in with a very dangerous shoal, which is about eleven or twelve miles in circuit, and surrounded with small stones that just shew themselves above water. They found here a strong northerly current but could not determine whether it inclined to the east or west. In the evening they discovered from the mast-head another island to the southward of them; the east-end of it seemed to rise in a peak, and had the appearance of a sail, but they did not go near enough to see any thing of it from the deck. Its latitude is supposed to be about  $2^{\circ} 50'$  N. and its longitude east of



London, about  $136^{\circ} 10' E$ . They continued to have a current to the northward, till the 5th of October, when, being in latitude  $4^{\circ} 30' N$ . They found it southerly, and very strong. They had, among other deficiencies and misfortunes, no small boat on board, so that they could not try these currents, which they had a great desire to do; but it was thought that when the current set southward it inclined to the east, and that when it set northward it inclined to the west.

On the 12th they discovered a small island with trees upon it, though scarcely bigger than a rock, and called it Current Island. It lies in latitude  $4^{\circ} 46' N$ . longitude  $14^{\circ} 24' W$ . of Queen Charlotte's Foreland. The next day they discovered two other small islands which were called St. Andrew's Islands; they lie in latitude  $5^{\circ} 18' N$ . longitude  $14^{\circ} 47' W$ . of Queen Charlotte's Foreland. The small island was called Current Island because they had here a southerly current, so strong that it set them from twenty-four to thirty miles southward every day, besides the difference it might make in their longitude. The wind was now variable, blowing by turns from every point in the compass, with much rain, and hard squalls. On the 20th, being in latitude  $8^{\circ} N$ . it blew with such violence that they were obliged to lie to sixty-four hours. This gale, which made a very great sea, the captain supposed to be the shifting of the monsoon, and notwithstanding the southerly current, it drove them, while they lay to, as far as nine degrees northward.

On the 26th they discovered land again, but not being able to make an observation, they could ascertain their latitude and longitude only by their dead reckoning; the next day, however, was more favourable, and

the captain then found the effect of the current had been so great, that he was obliged to add to the log S. W. by S. no less than 64 miles for the last two days. They now knew that the land they had seen was the north-east part of the island of Mindanao. At this time they were not certain whether it was Mindanao or St. John's, they got nearer to it the next day, and made what they knew to be St. Augustina, the south-eastermost part of the island, which rises in little hummocks, that run down to a low point at the water's edge; it bears N. 40 E. at the distance of two and twenty leagues from a little island, which is distinguished from the other islands that lie off the southermost point of Mindanao by a hill or hummock, and which for that reason was called Hummock Island. All this land is very high, one ridge of mountains rising behind another, so that at a great distance it appears not like one island but several. After their first discovery of the island, they kept turning along the east side from the northward to Cape St. Augustina, nearly S. by W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. and N. by E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. for about twenty leagues. The wind was to the southward along the shore, and as they approached the land, they stood in for an opening, which had the appearance of a good bay, where they intended to anchor; but they found that it was too deep for their purpose, and that some shoals rendered the entrance of it dangerous. To this bay, which lies about eight or ten leagues N. by E. from Cape St. Augustina, the south-east extremity of the island, the Captain gave the name of Disappointment Bay. When they were in the offing, standing in for the bay, they observed a large hummock, which had the appearance of an island, but which they believe to be a peninsula, joined by a low isthmus to the main;

this hummock formed the northermost part of the entrance, and another high bluff point opposite to it formed the southermost part ; between these two points are several small islands, only one of which can be seen till they are approached very near. On this part of the coast they saw no signs of inhabitants ; the land is of a stupendous height, with mountains piled upon mountains, till the summits are hidden in the clouds ; in the offing therefore it is almost impossible to estimate its distance, for what appear then to be small hillocks, just emerging from the water, in comparison of the mountains that are seen over them, swell into high hills as they are approached, and the distance is found to be thrice as much as it was imagined. They found here a strong current setting to the southward along the shore, as the land trended. The high land that is to the north of St. Augustina, becomes gradually lower towards the Cape, a low flat point in which it terminates, and off which, at a very little distance, lie two large rocks. Its latitude is  $6^{\circ} 15' N.$  and the longitude, by account,  $127^{\circ} 20' E.$  From this Cape the land trends away W. and W. by S. for six or seven leagues, and then turns up to the N. W. making a very deep bay, and the bottom of which, as they crossed it from St. Augustina to the high land on the other side, which is not less than twelve leagues, they could not see. The coast on the farther side of it, coming up from the bottom, trends first to the S. and S. S. W. and then to the S. W. by W. towards the south extremity of the island. Off this southern extremity, lie 10 or 12 islands, which could not be contained in a circuit of less than fifteen leagues, and from the number of boats that they saw among them, appear to be well inhabited. The largest of these lies to the S. W. of the others,

and makes a remarkable peak, so that it is first seen in coming in with the land, and is indeed visible at a very great distance. Its latitude is about  $5^{\circ} 24' N.$  and its longitude, by account,  $126^{\circ} 37' E.$  This island, which Captain Carteret called Hummock Island, bears from St. Augustina S.  $40^{\circ} W.$  at the distance of between twenty and two and twenty leagues; and from the same Cape, the southermost part of the island Mindanao bears S. W.  $\frac{1}{2} W.$  at the distance of between twenty-one and twenty-three leagues. This southermost extremity consists of three or four points, which bear east and west of each other for about seven miles. They lie in latitude  $5^{\circ} 34' N.$  longitude  $126^{\circ} 25' E.$  according to their account. The variation here was one point east. They passed between these islands and the main, and found the passage good, the current setting to the westward. All the southern part of Mindanao is extremely pleasant, and many spots where the woods had been cleared for plantations, and fine lawns of a beautiful verdure; this part also is inhabited, as well as the neighbouring islands. When they came to open the land to the westward of the southermost point, they found it trend from that point W.N.W. and N.W. by W. forming first a point at the distance of about seven or eight leagues, and then a very deep bay running so far in to the N. and N. E. that they could not see the bottom of it. The westermost point of this bay is low, but the land soon rises again, and runs along to the N. W. by W. which seems to be the direction of this coast, from the southermost point of the islands towards the city of Mindanao.

To the westward of this deep bay the land is all flat, and in comparison of the other parts of the island, but

thinly wooded. Over this flat appears a peak of stupendous height, which rises into the clouds like a tower. Between the entrance of this bay and the south point of the island there is another very high hill, the top of which has the funnel shape of a volcano, but they did not perceive that it emitted either fire or smoke.

Between Hummock Island, which is the largest and westernmost of these islands, and those to the eastward of it, which are all flat and even, is a passage running north and south, which appears to be clear. The northeastermost of those islands, is small, low, and flat, with a white sandy beach all round it, and a great many trees in the middle. East, or north-east of this island, there are shoals and breakers; and they saw no other appearance of danger in these parts. As they coasted this island, for the reason hereafter mentioned, they found the current set very strong to the southward along the shore, till they came to the south end of it, where they found it run N. W. and N. W. by W. which is nearly as the land trends. They had the winds commonly from S.W. to N. W. with light airs, frequent rain, and unsettled weather.

As there were many sick persons on board, and they were also in the most pressing need of refreshments, the captain determined to try what could he procure in a bay which Dampier has described as lying on the south-east part of the island, and which, he says, furnished him with great plenty of deer from a savannah. He therefore coasted that side of the island, and that he might be sure not to miss the bay, he sent out the lieutenant with the boat and a proper number of hands, to keep in shore ahead of the ship. No such bay however was to be found, but at the very southermost extremity



of the island, they opened a little nook, at the bottom of which was a town and a fort. As soon as their boat was discovered by the people on shore, they fired a great gun, and sent off three boats or canoes full of people. As the lieutenant had not a sufficient force to oppose them, he immediately made towards the ship, and the canoes chased him till they came within sight of her, and being then over-matched in their turn, they thought fit to go back. Being thus disappointed in his search of Dampier's Bay and Savannah, Captain Carteret would have anchored off this town, notwithstanding these hostile appearances, if it had not been necessary first to get up some guns from the hold, and make a few necessary repairs upon the rigging; this, however, being the case, he ran a little to the eastward, where, on the 2d of November, he came to an anchor in a little bay, having a bottom of soft mud, and seven fathom of water, at the distance of a cable's length from the shore; the westernmost point of the bay bore W. S. W. distant about three miles; the easternmost point E. by S. distant about one mile; a river, which empties itself into the bay, about N. W. and the peak of the island, called Hummock Island, S. 7° E. distant about five leagues. Before it was dark the same day, their two boats went to the river, and brought off their loads of water; they saw no signs of inhabitants where they were on shore, but those in the ship observed a canoe come round the westernmost point of the bay, which they supposed had been dispatched from the town, to learn what they were, or at least to see what they were doing. As soon as our navigator discovered this canoe, he hoisted English colours, and was not without hope that she would come on board, but after viewing them some time, she returned. As

they had seen no inhabitants, nor any signs of inhabitants where they got their water, Captain Carteret intended to procure a farther supply the next day from the same place, and endeavour also to recruit their wood ; but about nine o'clock at night, they were suddenly surprised by a loud noise on that part of the shore which was abreast of the ship ; it was made by a great number of human voices, and very much resembled a war-whoop of the American savages, a hideous shout which they give at the moment of their attack, and in which all who have heard it, agree there is something so inexpressibly terrifying and horrid.

The captain now convinced that it was necessary to dispose of his little force to the greatest advantage, began the next day, by getting the guns up from the hold, and making the necessary repairs to their rigging. At eleven o'clock not having seen any thing of the people, who had endeavoured to terrify them by their yells in the night, he sent the long boat on shore for more water ; but, as he thought it probable that they might have concealed themselves in the woods, he kept the cutter manned and armed, with the lieutenant on board, that immediate succour might be sent to the waterers, if any danger should threaten them. It soon appeared that his conjectures were well founded, for his people had no sooner left their boat, than a number of armed men rushed out of the woods, one of whom held up somewhat white, which he took to be a signal of peace. Upon this occasion he was again sensible of the mortifying deficiency in the ship's equipment, which he had so often experienced before. Captain Carteret had no white flag on board, and therefore, as the best expedient in his power, he ordered the lieutenant, whom he

sent on shore in the cutter, to display one of his table cloths ; as soon as the officer landed, the standard bearer and another came down to him unarmed, and received him with great appearance of friendship. One of them addressed him in Dutch, which none of his people understood ; he then spoke a few words in Spanish, in which one of the persons in the cutter was a considerable proficient ; the Indian, however, spoke it so very imperfectly, that it was with great difficulty, and by the help of many signs, he made himself understood ; possibly if any of the captain's people had spoken Dutch, he might have been equally deficient in that language. He asked for the captain, however, by the name of the skipper, and enquired whether they were Hollanders ; whether their ship was intended for merchandise or for war ; how many guns and men she carried ; and whether she had been, or was going to Batavia. When they had satisfied him in all these particulars, he said that he would introduce them to the Governor, whom he distinguished by the title of Raja. The lieutenant then told him, that they intended to go to the town, but that they were in immediate want of water, and therefore desired permission to fill some casks ; he also requested that the people who were armed with bows and arrows might be ordered to a great distance. With both these requisitions the Indian, who seemed to be invested with considerable authority, complied ; and as he seemed to take particular notice of a silk handkerchief which the lieutenant had tied round his neck, it was immediately presented to him ; in return for which he desired him to accept a kind of cravat, made of course callico, which was tied round his own, his dress being somewhat after the Dutch fashion. After this interchange of cravats,

he inquired of the officer whether the ship was furnished with any articles for trade ; to which he answered that she was sufficiently furnished to trade for provisions, but nothing more ; the chief replied, that whatever they wanted they should have. After this conference, which Captain Carteret considered as an earnest of every advantage which this place could afford them, the boats returned on board laden with water, and they went cheerfully on with their business on board the ship. In about two hours, however, they saw with equal surprise and concern, many hundreds of armed men, posting themselves in parties at different places among the trees, upon the beach, abreast of the ship ; their weapons, were musquets, bows and arrows, long pikes or spears, broad swords, a kind of hanger called a cress, and targets ; they observed also, that they hauled a canoe, which lay under a shed upon the beach, up into the woods. These were not friendly appearances, and they were succeeded by others that were still more hostile ; for these people spent all the remainder of the day in entering and rushing out of the woods, as if they had been making sallies to attack an enemy ; sometimes shooting their arrows, and throwing their lances in the water towards the ship ; and sometimes lifting their targets, and brandishing their swords in a menacing manner. In the mean time the captain's men were not idle on board ; they got up their guns, repairing their rigging, and put every thing in order before evening, and then, being ready to sail, he determined, if possible, to get another conference with the people on shore, and learn the reason of so sudden and unaccountable a change of behaviour. The lieutenant therefore was again dispatched, and as a testimony that their disposi-

tion was still peaceable, the table cloth was again displayed as a flag of truce. The lieutenant had the precaution, however, to order the boat to a part of the beach which was clear of the wood, that the people on board might not be liable to mischief from enemies whom they could not see; the captain also ordered that nobody should go on shore. When the Indians saw the boat come to the beach, and observed that nobody landed, one of them came out of the wood with a bow and arrows in his hand, and made signs for the boat to come to the place where he stood. This the officer very prudently declined, as he would then have been within bow-shot of an ambuscade, and after waiting some time, and finding that a conference could be procured upon no other terms, he returned back to the ship. It was certainly in the captain's power to have destroyed many of these unfriendly people, by firing his great guns into the wood, but it would have answered no good purpose; they could not afterward have procured wood and water here without risking the loss of their own people, and he still hoped that refreshment might be procured upon friendly terms at the town, which, now he was in a condition to defend himself against a sudden assault, he resolved to visit. Accordingly on the 4th, as soon as it was light, he sailed from this place, which he called Deceitful Bay, with a light land breeze, and between ten and eleven o'clock they got off the bay or nook, at the bottom of which their boats had discovered the town and fort. It happened, however, that just at this time the weather became thick with heavy rain, and it began to blow hard from a quarter which made the land here a lee shore; this obliged the captain to stand off, and having no time to lose, he stood away



to the westward that he might reach Batavia before the season was past.

They left Mindanao greatly disappointed in their hope of obtaining refreshments, which at first the inhabitants so readily promised to furnish. They suspected that there were Dutchmen, or at least Dutch partisans in the town; and that, having discovered them to be English, they had dispatched an armed party to prevent their having any intercourse with the natives, who arrived about two hours after their friendly conference, and were the people that defied them from the shore.

They now stood to the westward for the passage between the islands of Borneo and Celebes, called the Streight of Macassar, and made it on the 14th. They observed, that during the whole of this run they had a strong north-westerly current; but that while they were nearer to Mindanao than Celebes, it ran rather towards the west than the north. The land of Celebes on the north end runs along to the entrance of the passage, is very lofty, and seems to trend away about W. by S. to a remarkable point in the passage, which makes in a hummock, and which at first they took for an island. Our navigator gave it the name of Hummock Point. Its latitude, according to his account, is  $1^{\circ} 20' N.$  longitude  $121^{\circ} 39' E.$ ; and it is a good mark for those to know the passage that fall in with the land coming from the eastward, who, if possible, should always make this side of the passage. From Hummock Point the land trends more away to the southward, about S. W. by W. and to the southward of it there is a deep bay, full of islands and rocks, which appeared to be very dangerous. Just off the Point there are two rocks, which, though they

are above water, cannot be seen from a ship till she is close to the land. To the eastward of this Point, close to the shore, are two islands, one of them very flat, long, and even, and the other swelling into a hill; both these islands, as well as the adjacent country, are well covered with trees; Captain Carteret stood close in a little to the eastward of them, and had no ground with an hundred fathom, within half a mile of the shore, which seemed to be rocky. A little to the westward of these islands, they saw no less than sixty boats, which were fishing on some shoals that lie between them and the Hummock Point. This part of the shore appeared to be foul, and, it seems, should not be approached without great caution. In this place they found the currents various and uncertain, sometimes to the southward, and sometimes to the northward, and sometimes there was no current at all; the weather also was very unsettled, and so was the wind; it blew, however, chiefly to the south and south-west quarter, but they had sometimes sudden and violent gusts, and tornadoes from the N.W. with thunder, lightning, and rain; these generally lasted about an hour, when they were succeeded by a dead calm, and the wind would afterwards spring up fresh from the S. W. or S. S. W. (which was right against them) and blow strong. From these appearances it was conjectured that the shifting season had commenced, and that the west monsoon would soon set in. The ship sailed so ill that they made very little way; they frequently sounded in this passage, but could get no ground.

On the 21st of November, as they were standing towards Borneo, they made two small islands, which are very small, and covered with trees. By the captain's

account, they lie in latitude  $1^{\circ} 44' N.$  longitude  $7^{\circ} 32' W.$  off the south end of Mindanao, and are distant from Hummock or Stroomen Point, about fifty-eight leagues. The weather was now hazy, but happening suddenly to clear up, they saw a shoal, with breakers, at the distance of about five or six miles, from the south to the northwest. Off the north end of this shoal they saw four hummocks close together, which they took for small islands, and seven more from the S.  $\frac{1}{2}$  W. to the W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. whether these are really islands, or some hills on the island of Borneo, could not be determined. This shoal is certainly very dangerous, but may be avoided by going to the westward of Taba Islands, where the passage is clear and broad. In the French chart of Monsieur d'Apres de Mandeville, published in 1745, two shoals are laid down, to the eastward, and a little to the north of these islands; one of them is called Vanloorif, and the other, on which are placed two islands, Harigs; but these shoals and islands have certainly no existence, as Captain Carteret turned through this part of the passage from side to side, and sailed over the very spot where they are supposed to lie. In the same chart seven small islands are also laid down within half a degree to the northward of the line, and exactly in the middle of the narrowest part of this passage; but neither do these islands exist, though our navigator believes there may be some small islands close to the main land of Borneo; he thought he had seen two, which they took to be those that are laid down in the charts off Porto Tubo, but of this he was not certain. The southermost and narrowest part of this passage is about eighteen or twenty leagues broad, with high lands on each side. They continued labouring in it till the 27th, before they

crossed the line, so that they were a fortnight in sailing eight and twenty leagues, the distance from the north entrance of the Streight, which they made on the 14th. After they got to the southward of the line, they found a slight current setting against them to the northward, which daily increased; the weather was still unsettled, with much wet; the winds were chiefly S. W. and W. S. W. and very seldom farther to the northward than W. N. W. except in the tornadoes, which grew more frequent and violent; and by them they got nothing but hard labour, and they obliged them to hand all their sails, which indeed with their utmost effort they were scarcely able to do, their debility daily increasing by the falling sick of the few that were well, or the death of some among the many that were sick. Under these circumstances they used their utmost endeavours to get hold of the land on the Borneo side, but were not able, and continued to struggle with their misfortunes till the 3d of December, when they fell in with the small islands and shoals called the Little Pater-nosters, the southermost of which appeared to lie in latitude  $2^{\circ} 31'$  S. and the northermost in  $2^{\circ} 15'$  S. the longitude of the northermost about  $117^{\circ} 12'$  E.; they bear about S. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. and N. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. of each other, distant eight leagues, and between them are the others; the number of the whole is eight. They lie very near the Celebes side of the streight, and being unable either to weather them, or get to the westward of them, they were obliged to go between them and the island. They had here tempestuous weather and contrary winds, with sudden and impetuous gusts, which as they had not a number of hands sufficient to bend the sails, often endangered their masts and yards, and did great damage to their

sails and rigging, especially at this time, as they were obliged to carry all the sail they could to prevent their falling into a deep bight, on the Celebes shore. The ravages of the scurvy were now universal, there not being one individual among them that was free, and the winds and currents being so hard against them, that they could neither get westing nor southing to reach any place of refreshment ; the mind participated in the sufferings of the body, and an universal despondency was reflected from one countenance to another, especially among those who were not able to come upon the deck. In this deplorable situation they continued till the 10th, and it is not perhaps very easy for the most fertile imagination to conceive by what their danger and distress could possibly be increased ; yet debilitated, sick, and dying as they were, in sight of land that they could not reach, and exposed to tempests which they could not resist ; they had the additional misfortune to be attacked by a pirate ; that this unexpected mischief might lose none of its force, it happened at midnight, when the darkness that might almost be felt, could not fail to co-operate with whatever tended to produce confusion and terror. This sudden attack, however, rather roused than depressed them, and though their enemy attempted to board them before they could have the least apprehension that an enemy was near, they defeated his purpose ; he then plied them with what they supposed to be swivel guns, and small arms, very briskly ; but though he had the start of them, they soon returned his salute with such effect, that shortly after he sunk, and all the unhappy wretches on board perished. It was a small vessel, but of what country, or how manned, it was impossible to know. The lieutenant, and one of



the men, were wounded, though not dangerously ; part of their running rigging was cut ; and they received some other slight damage. They knew this pirate to be a vessel which they had seen in the dusk of the evening, and they afterwards learnt that she belonged to a freebooter, who had more than thirty such vessels under his command. The smallness of their vessel encouraged the attack, and her strength being so much more than in proportion to her size, supposing her a merchantman, rendered it fatal.

On the 12th of May, they fell in with the dangerous shoals called the Spera Mondes, and had the mortification to find that the westerly monsoon was now set in, against which, and the current, it was impossible for any ship to get as far westward as Batavia. As it was now necessary to wait till the return of the eastern monsoon, and the shifting of the current ; as they had buried 13 of their crew, and no less than 30 more were at the point of death ; as all the petty officers were among the sick, and the lieutenant and the captain, who did all duties, in a feeble condition ; it was impossible that they should keep the sea, and they had no chance of preserving those who were still alive, but by getting on shore at some place, where rest and refreshment might be procured ; it was therefore determined to take advantage of their being so far to the southward, and endeavour to reach Macassar, the principal settlement of the Dutch, upon the island of Celebes.

The next day they made some islands, which lie not far from that place, and saw, what sometimes they took for shoals, and sometimes for boats, with men on board, but afterwards appeared to be trees, and other drift floating about, with birds sitting upon them ; they sud-

denly found themselves twenty miles farther to the southward than they expected, for the current, which had for some time set them to the northward, had set them to the southward, during the night. They now hauled up to east, and E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  N. intending to have gone to the northward of a shoal, which has no name in our East India Pilot, but which the Dutch call the Thumb; by noon, however, they found themselves upon it, their water shallowing at once to four fathom, with rocky ground. They now hauled off to the south-west, and keeping the boat ahead to sound, ran round the west side of the shoal in ten and twelve fathom; their water deepening when they hauled off to the west, and shallowing when they hauled off east. Their latitude, by observation, when they were upon the shoal, was  $5^{\circ} 20'$  S. and the northermost of these islands, called the Three Brothers, then bore S.  $81^{\circ}$  E. at the distance of five or six leagues. This island is, in the English Pilot, called Don Dinanga, but by the Dutch the North Brother. Between the Three Brothers, and the main of Celebes, there is another island much larger than either of them. called the island of Tonikiky; but none of them are inhabited, though there are a few huts belonging to fishermen upon them all. The passage between the shoal and this island is clear and good, with from ten to thirteen fathom and a sandy bottom; but the soundings are to be kept on the side of the island in twelve fathom, and never under ten; it is, however, very difficult and dangerous for a ship to fall in with the land this way without a pilot on board, for there are many shoals and rocks under water. When they got near to the Celebes shore, they had land and sea-breezes, which obliged them to edge along the coast, though their strength was so much reduced, that it was

with the utmost difficulty they could work the stream anchor.

In the evening of the 15th, they anchored at about the distance of four miles from the town of Macassar, which appeared to lie in latitude  $5^{\circ} 10'$  or  $5^{\circ} 12'$  S. longitude  $117^{\circ} 28'$  E. having spent no less than five and thirty weeks in their passage from the Streight of Magellan.

---

### *CHAP. IV.*

---

Unkind Reception off Macassar—Reconciliation—Passage to Bonthain—Transactions there—Account of the place—Of Macassar—Passage to Batavia—Further Transactions—Voyage round the Cape of Good Hope to England.

ABOUT eleven o'clock on the same night that they anchored, a Dutchman came on board, who had been dispatched by the governor, to learn who they were. When Captain Carteret made him understand that the ship was an English man of war, he seemed to be greatly alarmed, no man of war belonging to the King of Great Britain having ever been there before, and he could not by any means persuade him to leave the deck, and go down into the cabin; they parted, however, to all appearance, good friends.

On the 16th, at day-break, the captain sent the lieutenant to the town, with a letter to the governor, in which he acquainted him the reason of his coming thither, and requested the liberty of the port to procure refreshments for his ship's company, who were in a dying condition, and shelter for the vessel against the approaching storms, till the return of a fit season for sailing to the westward. Captain Carteret ordered that this letter should, without good reason to the contrary, be

delivered into the governor's own hand ; but when his officer got to the wharf of the town, neither he nor any other person in the boat was suffered to land. Upon this refusal to deliver the letter to a messenger, the governor was made acquainted with it, and two officers, called the shebander and the fiscal, were sent down to him, who, as a reason why he could not deliver the letter to the governor himself, pretended that he was sick, and said, that they came by his express order to fetch it : upon this the letter was at length delivered to them, and they went away. While they were gone, the officer and men were kept on board their boat, exposed to the burning heat of the sun, which was almost vertical at noon, and none of the country boats were suffered to come near enough to sell them any refreshment. In the mean time the crew observed a great hurry and bustle on shore, and all the sloops and vessels that were proper for war were fitted out with the utmost expedition ; they should, however, they believed, have been an overmatch for their whole sea force, if all their people had been well. In the mean time, Captain Carteret intended to have gone and anchored close to the town, but now the boat was absent, their united strength was not sufficient to weigh the anchor though a small one. After waiting five hours in the boat, the lieutenant was told that the governor had ordered two gentlemen to wait upon the captain, with an answer to his letter. Soon after the lieutenant had returned, and made this report, the two gentlemen came on board, and they afterwards learnt that one of them was an ensign of the garrison, named *Le Cerf*, and the other Mr. Douglas, a writer of the Dutch East India Company ; they delivered the captain the governor's letter, but it proved



to be written in Dutch, a language which not a single person on board could understand; the two gentlemen who brought it, however, both spoke French, and one of them interpreted the contents in that language. The purport of it was "that Captain Carteret should instantly depart from the port, without coming any nearer to the town; that he should not anchor in any part of the coast, or permit any of his people to land in any place that was under his jurisdiction." Before Captain Carteret made any reply to this letter, he shewed the gentlemen who brought it the number of his sick; at the sight of so many unhappy wretches, who were dying of languor and disease, they seemed to be much affected; and he then urged again the pressing necessity he was under of procuring refreshment, to which they had been witnesses, the cruelty and injustice of refusing to supply him, which was not only contrary to treaty, as they were in a King's ship, but to the laws of nature, as they were human beings; they seemed to admit the force of this reasoning, but they had a short and final answer ready, "that they had absolute and indispensable orders from their masters, not to suffer any ship, of whatever nation, to stay at this port, and that these orders they must implicitly obey." To this the captain replied, that persons in their situation had nothing worse to fear than what they suffered, and that therefore, if they did not immediately allow him the liberty of the port, to purchase refreshments, and procure shelter, he would as soon as the wind would permit, in defiance of their menaces, and all their force, go and anchor close to the town; that if at last he should find himself unable to compel them to comply with requisitions, the reasonableness of which could not be controverted, he would

run the ship aground under their walls, and, after selling their lives as dearly as they could, bring upon them the disgrace of having reduced a friend and ally to so dreadful an extremity. At this they seemed to be alarmed, as their situation alone was sufficient to convince them that the captain was in earnest, and urged him with great emotion to remain where he was, at least till he had heard again from the governor ; to this, after some altercation, he consented, upon condition that he heard from the governor before the sea-breeze set in the next day.

They passed all the remainder of this day, and all the night, in a state of anxiety, not unmixed with indignation, that greatly aggravated their distress ; and very early the next morning, they had the mortification to see a sloop that mounted eight carriage guns, and one of the vessels of the country, fitted out for war with a great number of soldiers on board, come from the town, and anchor under each of their bows. Captain Carteret immediately sent his boat to speak with them, but they would make no reply to any thing that was said. About noon, the sea-breeze set in and not having then heard again from the governor the captain got under sail, and proceeded towards the town, according to his declaration, resolving, if the vessels that had anchored under their bows, should oppose them, to repress force with force as far as they were able ; these two vessels, however, happily for both parties, contented themselves with weighing anchor, and attending their motions.

Very soon after they had got under sail, a handsome vessel, with a band of music, and several gentlemen on board, made up to them, and told them that they were sent by the governor, but could not come on board if the *Swallow* did not drop her anchor again ; their anchor

was therefore immediately dropped, and the gentlemen came on board; they proved to be Mr. Blydenbourg, the fiscal, Mr. Voll, the shebander, an officer called the license-master, or master of the port, and Mr. Douglas the writer, who has been mentioned already. They expressed some surprise at the captain's having got under sail, and asked him what he intended to have done; he told them that he intended neither more nor less than to fulfil the declarations he made the day before; that justified by the common rights of mankind, which were superior to every other law, he would, rather than have put again to sea, where their destruction, either by shipwreck, sickness, or famine, was inevitable, have come up to their walls, and either have compelled them to furnish the necessaries they wanted, or have run the ship on shore, since it was better to perish at once in a just contest, than to suffer the lingering misery of anticipating the perdition that they could not avoid. He observed also, that no civilized people had ever suffered even the captives of war to perish for want of the necessaries of life, much less the subjects of an ally, who asked nothing but permission to purchase food with their money. They had readily allowed the truth of all he had said, but seemed to think he had been too hasty. He then observed that he had waited the full time of his stipulation, and they in return made some excuse for their not having come sooner, telling him that, as a proof of their having admitted his claim, they had brought him such provisions as their country would afford. These were immediately taken on board, and consisted of two sheep, an elk ready killed, and a few fowls, with some vegetables and fruit. This most welcome supply was divided among the people, and that

most salutary, and exquisite dainty, broth, made for the sick. Another letter from the governor was then produced, in which, to the captain's great disappointment, he was again ordered to leave the port, and to justify the order, it was alledged, that to suffer a ship of any nation to stay and trade, either at the port, or any other part of the island, was contrary to the agreement which had been made by the East India Company with the native kings and governors of the country, who had already expressed some displeasure on their account; and for farther particulars the captain was referred to the gentlemen that brought the letter, whom the governor stiled his commissaries. To these gentlemen Captain Carteret immediately observed, that no stipulation concerning trade could affect them, as they were a king's ship; at the same time he produced his commission, it not being possible to bring under the article of trade the selling them food and refreshments for their money without the utmost violence to language and common sense. After this they made several propositions, which the captain rejected, because his departure from this place, before the return of the season, was included in them all. He then recurred to his former declaration, and to enforce it, shewed them the corpse of a man who had died that morning, and whose life would probably have been saved, if they had afforded them refreshments when they first came to an anchor on their coast. This put them to a stand; but after a short pause, they inquired very particularly whether he had been among the spice islands; the captain answered them in the negative, and they appeared to be convinced that he spoke truth. After this they came to a better understanding, and told him that though they

could not, without disobedience to the most direct and positive orders of the company, suffer them to remain here, yet that he was welcome to go to a little bay not far distant, where he should find effectual shelter from the bad monsoon, and might erect an hospital for his sick, assuring him at the same time that provision and refreshments were more plenty there than at Macassar, from whence, whatever else he wanted should be sent him, and offering him a good pilot to carry him to his station. To this the captain gladly consented, upon condition that what they had offered should be confirmed to him by the governor and council of Macassar, that he might be considered as under the protection of the Dutch nation, and that no violence should be offered to his people; for all this they engaged their honour on behalf of the governor and council, promising him the assurance he had required on the next day, and requesting that in the mean time he would remain where he was. He then inquired why the two vessels which were at anchor under their bows, were allotted to that station; and they told him, for no other reason than to prevent the people of the country from offering them any violence. - When matters were thus far settled between them, the captain expressed his concern that, except a glass of wine, he could present them with nothing better than bad salt meat, and bread full of weevils, upon which they very politely desired that he would permit their servants to bring in the victuals which had been dressing in their own vessel; he readily consented, and a very genteel dinner was soon served up, consisting of fish, flesh, vegetables, and fruit. After they parted and at their leaving the ship the captain saluted them with nine guns.



On the 18th, the shebander was sent to acquaint the captain that the governor had council had confirmed the engagement which had been made with him on their behalf. Every thing was now settled much to his satisfaction, except the procuring money for his bills upon the government of Great Britain, which the shebander said he would solicit. At eight o'clock in the evening, he came on board again, to let him know that there was not any person in the town who had money to remit to Europe, and that there was not a dollar in the company's chest. The captain answered, that as he was not permitted to go on shore to negotiate his bills himself, he hoped they would give him credit, offering him bills for any debt he should contract, or to pay it at Batavia. To this the shebander replied, that the resident at Bonthain, the place to which he was going, would receive orders to supply him with whatever he should want, and would be glad to take his bills in return, as he had money to remit, and was himself to go to Europe the next season. He told the captain also, that he had considerable property in England, being a denison of that country; "and," added the shebander, "he has also money in my hands, with which I will purchase such things as you want from Macassar, and see that they are sent after you." Having specified what these articles were to be, and agreed with him for the quantity and the price, they parted.

The next day, in the afternoon, Captain Carteret received a letter, signed by the governor and council of Macassar, containing the reasons why he was sent to Bonthain, and confirming the verbal agreement which subsisted between them. Soon after the ensign M. le Cerf, the secretary of the council, and a pilot, came on board

to attend them to Bonthain. Le Cerf was to command the soldiers who were on board the guard boats; and the secretary, as they afterwards discovered, was to be a check upon the resident, whose name was Swellingrabel\*.

On the 20th, at day-break, they sailed, and the day following, in the afternoon, anchored in Bonthain road with their two guard boats, which were immediately moored close to the shore, to prevent the country boats from coming near, and their boats from going near them. Captain Carteret immediately waited upon the resident Mr. Swellingrabel, who spoke English but very imperfectly, and having settled with him all matters relating to money and provisions, a house was allotted him near the sea-side, and close to a little pallisadoed fort of eight guns, the only one in this place, which he converted into an hospital, under the direction of the surgeon; to this place the captain immediately sent all the people who were thought incapable of recovering on board, and reserved the rest as a security against accidents. As soon as the crew were on shore, a guard of thirty-six private men, two serjeants, and two corporals, all under the command of Ensign Le Cerf, was set over them; and none of them were suffered to go more than thirty yards from the hospital, nor were any of the country people allowed to come near enough to sell them any

---

\*This gentleman's father died second Governor of the Cape of Good Hope, where he married an English lady of the name of Fothergill. Mr. Swellingrabel, the resident here, married the daughter of Cornelius Sinklaar, who had been governor of Macassar, and died about two years ago (1766) in England, having come hither to see some of his mother's relations.

thing, so that the sailors got nothing of them but through the hands of the Dutch soldiers, who abused their power very shamefully. When they saw any of the country people carrying what they thought the invalids would purchase, they first took it away, and then asked the price; what was demanded signified little, the soldier gave what he thought proper, which was seldom one fourth of the value; and if the countryman ventured to express any discontent, he gave him immediately an earnest of perfect satisfaction, by flourishing his broadsword over his head; this was always sufficient to silence complaint, and send the sufferer quietly away; after which the soldier sold what he had thus acquired for a profit of sometimes more than a thousand per cent. This behaviour was so cruel to the natives, and so injurious to the English, that Captain Carteret ventured to complain of it to the resident, and the other two gentlemen, Le Cerf and the secretary. The resident, with becoming spirit, reprimanded the soldiers; but it produced so little effect that the captain could not help entertaining suspicions that Le Cerf connived at these practices, and shared the advantages which they produced. He suspected him also of selling arrack to his men, of which he complained, but without redress; and he knew that his slaves were employed to buy things at the market which his wife afterwards sold to them for more than twice as much as they cost. The soldiers were indeed guilty of many other irregularities; it was the duty of one of them by rotation to procure the day's provision for the whole guard, a service which he constantly performed by going into the country with his musquet and a bag; nor was the honest provider always content with what the bag would con-

tain, for one of them, without any ceremony, drove down a young buffalo that belonged to some of the country people, and his comrades not having wood at hand to dress it when it was killed, supplied themselves by pulling down some of the pallisadoes of the fort. When this was reported to the captain, he thought it so extraordinary that he went on shore to see the breach, and found the poor black people repairing it.

On the 26th, a sloop laden with rice was sent out from this place in order to land her cargo at Macassar; but after having attempted it three days she was forced to return. The weather was now exceedingly tempestuous, and all navigation at an end from east to west till the return of the eastern monsoon. On the same day two large sloops that were bound to the eastward anchored here, and the next morning a large ship from Batavia, with troops on board from the Banda Islands; but none of the crew of any of these vessels were suffered to speak to those of the *Swallow*, whose boats were restrained from going on board her. As this was a mortifying restriction, they requested Mr. Swellingrabel to buy them some salt meat from the large ship; and he was so obliging as to procure them four casks of very good European meat, two of pork and two of beef.

On the 28th, a fleet of more than an hundred sail of the small country vessels, called *Proas*, anchored here; their burden is from twelve to eighteen and twenty ton, and they carry from sixteen to twenty men. Captain Carteret was told that they carried on a fishery round the island, going out with one monsoon, and coming back with the other, so as always to keep under the lee of the land; the fish was sent to the China-market,

and he observed that all these vessels carried Dutch colours.

No event worthy of notice happened till January 18, 1768, and then Captain Carteret learnt by a letter from Macassar, that the *Dolphin* had been at Batavia. On the 28th the secretary of the council, who had been sent hither with *Le Cerf*, as they supposed to be a check upon the resident, was called to Macassar. By this time the carpenter, having in a great degree recovered his health, examined the state of the vessel, and to their regret she appeared to be very leaky; their main-yard also was found not only to be sprung, but to be rotten and unserviceable. They got it down and patched it up as well as they could, without either iron or a forge, so that they hoped it would serve them till they got to Batavia, for no wood was to be procured here of which a new one could be made. To the leaks very little could be done, and they were therefore reduced to an entire dependence upon their pumps.

On the 19th of February, *Le Cerf*, the military officer who commanded the soldiers on shore, was recalled, as it was said, to fit out an expedition for the island of Bally; on the 7th of March, the largest of their guard-boats, a sloop about forty-five tons, was ordered back to Macassar with part of the soldiers; and on the 9th, the resident, Mr. Swellingrabel, received a letter from the governor of that place, inquiring when he should sail for Batavia. Captain Carteret was surprised at the recal of the officer, and the guard boat; but much more at the contents of the governor's letter, because he knew that it was impossible he should sail till May, as the eastern monsoon would not sooner set in. All matters however remained in the same situation till near the



end of the month, when some of his people took notice, that for a short time past a small canoe had gone round them several times at different hours of the night, and had disappeared as soon as those on board perceived any body stirring in the ship. On the 29th, while these things were the subjects of speculation, one of his officers who came from the shore brought their captain a letter, which he said had been delivered to him by a black man; it was directed, "To the Commander of the English ship at Bonthyn." That the reader may understand this letter, it is necessary to acquaint him, that the island of Celebes is divided into several districts, which are distinct sovereignties of the native princes. The town of Macassar is in a district called also Macassar or Bony, the king of which is in alliance with the Dutch, who have been many times repulsed in an attempt to reduce other parts of the island, one of which is inhabited by a people called Bugguses, and another is called Waggs or Tosora. The town of Tosora is fortified with cannon, for the natives had been long furnished with fire-arms from Europe, before the Dutch settled themselves at Macassar in the room of the Portuguese.

The letter acquainted the captain that a design had been formed by the Dutch, in conjunction with the king of Bony, to cut them off; that the Dutch however, was not to appear in it; that the business was to be done by a son of the king of Bony, who was besides a gratuity from the Dutch, to receive the plunder of the vessel for his reward, and who, with eight hundred men, was then at Bonthain for that purpose; that the motive was jealousy of their forming a connexion with the Bugguses, and other people of the country, who were at enmity with the Dutch and their allies, and driving them out of

the island ; or at least a suspicion that if they got back to England, some project of that kind might be founded upon the intelligence they should give, no English man of war having ever been known to have visited the island before. This letter was a new subject of surprise and speculation. It was extremely ill written with respect to the style and manner, yet it did not therefore the less deserve notice. How far the intelligence which it contained was true or false, it was impossible to determine ; it was likely that the writer might be deceived himself ; it was also probable that he might have some view in wilfully deceiving the captain ; the falsehood might procure some little reward for the kindness and zeal which it placed to his account, or it might give him an importance which would at least be a gratification to his vanity. It behoved the captain however to take the same measures as if he had known it to be true ; accordingly they rigged the ship, bent the sails, unmoored, got springs upon their cables, loaded all their guns, and barricadoed the deck. At night every body slept under arms, and the next day they warped the vessel farther off from the bottom of the bay, towards the eastern shore, that they might have more room, fixed four swivel guns on the forepart of the quarter-deck, and took every other measure that appeared to be necessary for their defence.

The resident, Mr. Swellingrabel, was at this time absent twenty miles up the country upon the company's business, but had told the captain that he should certainly return on the 1st of April, a day which he now expected with great impatience, especially as an old drunken serjeant was the most respectable person at the fort. In the evening of the 31st, a packet of letters for

the resident arrived here from Macassar, which the captain considered as a good omen, and a pledge of his return at the time appointed ; but he conceived very different sentiments when he learnt that they were sent to him. He did not suspect that he was privy to any such design as had been intimated to him by the letter ; but he could not help doubting, whether he was not kept in the country, that he might be out of the way when it should be executed. In this state of anxiety and suspense, Captain Carteret sent a message to the fort, desiring that an express might be dispatched to him, to acquaint him that he wished to see him immediately upon business of great importance, which would admit of no delay. Whether his message was forwarded to him or not, it cannot be said, but having waited till the 4th of April, without having seen him or received any answer, the captain wrote him a letter, requesting to speak with him, in the most pressing terms, and the next day he came on board. A few minutes convinced the captain that he was wholly a stranger to any such design as he had been made to apprehend ; and Mr. Swellingrabel was clearly of opinion that no design had been formed. He said, indeed, that one Tomilaly, a counsellor or minister of the king of Bony, had lately paid him a visit, and had not well accounted for his being in this part of the country ; and at the captain's request, he very readily undertook to make farther inquiries concerning him and his people. After a few days he sent the captain word that having made a very strict inquiry, whether any other persons belonging to the king of Bony had been at Bonthain, he had been credibly informed that one of the princes of that kingdom had been there in disguise ; but that of the eight hundred men

who were said in his intelligence to be with him, he could find no traces ; so that, except they too, like the troops of the king of Brentford, were an army in disguise, it was certain that no such people could be in that country.

On the 16th, in the morning, the resident sent word, that M. Le Cerf was returned from Macassar with another officer, and that they would come on board and dine with the captain. When dinner was over, Captain Carteret asked Le Cerf, among other conversation, while they were taking their wine, what was become of his expedition to Bally ; to which he answered drily, that it was laid aside, without saying any thing more upon the subject. On the 23d, he returned to Macassar by sea, and the other officer, who was also an ensign, remained to take the command of the soldiers that were still left at this place.

The season now approached in which navigation to the westward would be again practicable, which gave them all great pleasure ; especially as putrid diseases had begun to make their appearance among them, and a putrid fever had carried off one of their people.

May 7, the resident gave the captain a long letter from the governor of Macassar, which was written in Dutch, and of which he gave the best interpretation he was able. The general purport of it was, that he had heard a letter had been sent to the captain, charging him, in conjunction with the king of Bony, with a design to cut them off ; that the letter was altogether false, exculpating himself with the most solemn protestations, and requiring the letter to be delivered up, that the writer might be brought to such punishment as he deserved. It is scarcely necessary to say that Captain Carteret did

not deliver up the letter because the writer would certainly have been punished with equal severity whether it was true or false ; but he returned the governor a polite answer, in which he justified the measures he had taken, without imputing any evil design to him or his allies ; and indeed there is the greatest reason to believe, that there was not sufficient ground for the charge contained in the letter, though it is not equally probable that the writer believed it to be false.

At day-break on the 22d, they sailed from this place, The town of Macassar is built upon a kind of point or neck of land, and is watered by a river or two which either run through, or very near it. It seems to be large, and there is water for a ship to come within half cannon shot of the walls ; the country about it is level, and has a most beautiful appearance ; it abounds with plantations, and groves of cocoa-nut trees, with a great number of houses interspersed, by which it appears to abound with people. At a distance inland, the country rises into hills of a great height, and becomes rude and mountainous. The town lies in latitude  $5^{\circ} 10'$ , or  $5^{\circ} 12' S.$  and longitude, by account,  $117^{\circ} 28' E.$  of London.

Bonthain is a large bay, where ships may lie in perfect security during both the monsoons ; the soundings are good and regular, and the bottom soft mud ; nor is there any danger coming in, but a ledge of rocks which are above water, and are a good mark for anchorage. The highest land in sight here is called Bonthain hill, and when a ship is in the offing at the distance of two or three miles from the land, she should bring this hill north, or  $N. \frac{1}{2} W.$  and then run in with it and anchor. They lay right under it, at the distance of about a mile from the shore. In this bay there are several small





*View of the Harbour and Town of Macassar.*



towns; that which is called Bonthain lies in the north east part of the bay, and here is the small pallisadoed fort that has been mentioned already, on which there are mounted eight guns that carry a ball of about eight pounds weight; it lies on the south side of a small river, and there is water for a ship to come close to it. The Dutch resident has the command of the place, and of Bullocomba, another town which lies about twenty miles farther to the eastward, where there is such another fort, and a few soldiers, who at the proper season are employed in gathering the rice, which the people pay as a tax to the Dutch.

Wood and water are to be procured here in great plenty; our navigators cut their wood near the river, under Bonthain hill; their water was procured partly from that river, and partly from another; when from the other their boat went above the fort with the casks that were to be filled, where there is a good rolling way; but as the river is small, and has a bar, the boat, after it is loaded, can come out only at high water. There are several other small rivers in the bay, from which water may be got upon occasion. They procured plenty of fresh provisions all the while they lay here at a reasonable rate; the beef is excellent; but it would be difficult to procure enough of it for a squadron. Rice may be had in any quantity, so may fowls and fruit; there are also abundance of wild hogs in the woods, which may be purchased at a low price, as the natives, being Mahometans, never eat them. Fish may be caught with the seine, and the natives, at times, supplied them with turtle; for this, like pork, is a dainty which they never touch.

Celebes is the key of the Molucca, or Spice Islands, which whoever is in possession of it must necessarily command; most of the ships that are bound to them, or to Banda, touch here, and always go between this island and that of Solayer. The bullocks here are the breed that have the bunch on the back, besides which the island produces horses, buffaloes, goats, sheep, and deer. The arrack and sugar that are consumed here are brought from Batavia.

The latitude of Bonthain hill is  $5^{\circ} 50'$  S. longitude, by account,  $117^{\circ} 53'$  E. The variation of the compass while they were here was  $1^{\circ} 16'$  W. The tides are very irregular; commonly it is but once high water and once low water in four and twenty hours, and there is seldom six feet difference between them.

When they left Bonthain Bay, they kept along the shore, at the distance of two or three miles, till the evening of the 22d, and then anchored for the night, in the passage between the two islands of Celebes and Tonikaky, in seven fathom and a half, with a bottom of soft mud. The next morning, they got again under sail, and took their departure from Tonikaky, which lies in latitude about  $5^{\circ} 31'$  S. longitude  $117^{\circ} 17'$  E.; the variation here was  $1^{\circ}$  W. They went to the southward of Tonikaky, and stood to the westward. About three o'clock in the afternoon they were abreast of the easternmost of the islands, which in the Dutch charts are called Tonym's Islands. This island bore about N. by W. at the distance of four miles, and the two westernmost were in sight. These three islands make a kind of right angled triangle with each other; the distance between the easternmost and westernmost is about eleven miles, and their relative bearings are very nearly east and west.

The distance between the two westernmost is nearly the same, and they bear to each other S. by E. and N. by W. About six o'clock, having just sounded, and got no ground, they suddenly found themselves upon a shoal, with not three fathom, and the water being smooth and clear, they could see great crags of coral rocks under their bottom, they immediately threw all the sails aback, and happily got off without damage; they had just passed over the easternmost edge of it, which is as steep as a wall, for they had not gone back two cables' length before they were out of soundings again. At this time, they had the two westernmost of the Tonyn Islands in one, bearing N. by W. at the distance of somewhat more than four miles from the nearest. This is a very dangerous shoal; it seemed to extend itself to the southward and westward, all round the two westernmost of these three islands, for near six miles, but about the easternmost island there seemed to be no danger; there was also a clear passage between this island and the other two. The latitude of the easternmost and westernmost of these islands is  $5^{\circ} 31' S.$  The easternmost is distant thirty-four miles due west from Tonikaky, and the westernmost lies ten miles farther.

In the afternoon of the 25th, they found the water much discoloured, upon which they sounded, and had five and thirty fathom with soft mud; soon after they went over the northermost part of a shoal, and had no more than ten fathom with soft mud. In this place, where they found the water shallowest, it was foul; it seemed to be still shallower to the southward, but to the northward it appeared to be clear. At eleven o'clock the same night, they saw, to the northward, the southermost of the islands Salombo. It bears from the



last shoal N. W. by W.  $\frac{3}{4}$  W. at the distance of about fourteen leagues. It is to be remarked, that hereabout, off the island of Madura, the winds of the monsoons are commonly a month later in settling than at Celebes. The variation here was not more than half a degree west, and they found the current which before set to the southward, now setting to the N. W.

In the afternoon of the 26th they saw from the mast-head the island of Luback, and had soundings from thirty-five to forty fathom, with a bottom of bluish clay. The latitude of this island is  $5^{\circ} 43' S.$  and its longitude  $5^{\circ} 36'$  west of Tonikaky, from which it is distant about one hundred and twelve leagues. Its distance west from the islands of Salombo, is thirty-one leagues; they went to the northward of this island, and found a current setting to the W. N. W.

On the 29th, in the evening, they saw the cluster of small islands called Carimon Java. The latitude of the easternmost, which is also the largest, is  $5^{\circ} 48' S.$  and its longitude W. of Tonikaky,  $7^{\circ} 52'$ . From this island it is distant about 150 leagues, and forty-five leagues from Luback.

On the 2d of June, they hauled in and made the land of Java, which proved to be that part of the island which makes the easternmost point of the Bay of Batavia, called Carawawang Point. When they first got sight of the land, they had gradually decreased their soundings from forty to eight and twenty fathom, with a bottom of bluish mud. As they steered along the shore for Batavia, they decreased them gradually, still farther, to thirteen fathom, the depth in which, night coming on, they anchored near to the two small islands called Leyden and Alkmaar, in sight of Batavia; and in the afternoon

of the 3d, they anchored in the Road, which is so good that it may well be considered as a harbour. They had now great reason to congratulate themselves upon their situation, for during the whole of their passage from Celebes, the ship admitted so much water by her leaks, that it was all they could do to keep her from sinking, with two pumps constantly going. They found here eleven large Dutch ships, besides several that were less, one Spanish ship, a Portugese snow, and several Chinese junks. The next morning they saluted the town with eleven guns, and the same number was returned. As this was the birth-day of his Britannic Majesty King George, they afterwards fired one and twenty guns more on that occasion. They found the variation here to be less than half a degree to the westward. In the afternoon Captain Carteret waited upon the governor, and acquainted him with the condition of the ship, desiring liberty to repair her defects, to which he replied, that he must petition the council. On the 6th, therefore, which was council-day, he addressed a letter to the governor and council, setting forth more particularly the condition of the ship; and after requesting leave to repair her, he added, that he hoped they would allow him the use of such wharfs and store-houses as should be necessary. In the afternoon of the next day, the shebander, with Mr. Garrison, a merchant of the place, as interpreter, and another person, came to them. After the first compliments, the shebander said, that he was sent by the governor and council for a letter which they had heard he had received when he was at Bonthain, acquainting him that a design had been formed to cut off his ship, that the author of it, who had injured both them and their nation, in the person of the governor of that

place, might be punished. The captain readily acknowledged that he had received such information, but said, that he had never told any body it was by letter. The shebander then asked him if he would take an oath that he had received no such letter as he had been directed to demand: to which he answered that he was surprised at the question, and desired, that if the council had any such uncommon requisition to make of him, it might be in writing, and he would give up such reply, as, upon mature consideration, he should think proper. He then desired to know what answer he had been instructed to give to his letter, concerning the refitting of the ship; upon which he told him that the council had taken offence at his having used the word hope, and not written in the style of request, which had been invariably adopted by all merchants upon the like occasion; he replied, that no offence was intended on his part, and that he had used the first words which occurred to him, as proper to express his meaning. Thus they parted, and he heard no more of them till the afternoon of the 9th, when the shebander, and the same two gentlemen, came to him a second time. The shebander said that he was then commissioned from the council to require a writing under his hand, signifying that he believed the report of an intention formed at the island of Celebes to cut off his ship, was false and malicious; saying, that he hoped he had a better opinion of the Dutch nation than to suppose them capable of suffering so execrable a fact to be perpetrated under their government. Mr. Garrison then read a certificate, which, by order of the council, had been drawn up for the captain to sign: as, whatever was his opinion, he did not think it advisable to sign such a certificate, especially as it appeared to

be made a condition of complying with his request by the delay of an answer during this solicitation, he desired the shebander to shew his authority for the requisition he had made; the shebander replied, that he had no testimony of authority but the notoriety of his being a public officer, and the evidence of the gentlemen that were with him, confirming his own declaration, that he acted in this particular by the express order of council. The captain then repeated his request, that whatever the council required might be given in writing, that the sense of it might be fixed and certain, that he might have time to consider of his reply; but he gave him to understand that he could not do this without an order from the council, and he then absolutely refused to sign the paper, at the same time desiring an answer to his letter, which they not being prepared to give, they parted.

After this the captain waited in a fruitless expectation till the 15th, when the same three gentlemen came to him the third time, and said they had been sent to tell him the council had protested against his behaviour at Macassar, and his having refused to sign the certificate which had been required of him, was an insult upon them, and an act of injustice to their nation. The captain replied, that he was not conscious of having in any instance acted contrary to the treaties subsisting between the two kingdoms, unworthy of his character as an officer, honoured with a commission of his Britannic Majesty, or unsuitable to the trust reposed in him, though he did not think he had been used by the governor of Macassar as a subject of a friend and ally; desiring that if they had any thing to alledge against him it might be reduced to writing, and laid before the king his mas-

ter, to whom alone he thought himself amenable. With this answer they again departed, and the next day, having not yet received any answer to his letter, he wrote a second, directed like the first, in which he represented that the ship's leaks were every day increasing, and urged, in more pressing terms, his request that she might be repaired, and that the use of wharfs and store-houses might be afforded him.

On the 18th the shebander came again, and acquainted the captain that the council had given orders for the repair of the ship at Onrust, and as there was no store-house empty, had appointed one of the company's vessels to attend him, and take in his stores. Captain Carteret inquired whether there was not an answer to his letter in writing: to which he answered in the negative; adding, a message by him, or some other officer, had been always thought sufficient. After this the captain was supplied for his money with every thing he could desire, from the company's stores, without any further difficulty. A pilot was ordered to attend him, and on the 22d they anchored at Onrust, where, having cleared the ship, and put her stores on board the company's vessel, they found the bowsprit and cap, as well as the main-yard, rotten, and altogether unserviceable, the sheathing every where eaten off by the worms, and the main planks of the ship's bottom so much damaged and decayed, that it was absolutely necessary to heave her down, before she could be sufficiently repaired to sail for Europe; but as other ships were already heaved down, and consequently the wharfs at this time pre-occupied, the carpenters could not begin their work till the 24th of July. Under the hands of these people the ship continued till the 16th of August, when her



defects being at length repaired, much to the captain's satisfaction, he thought she might then safely proceed to Europe, though the Dutch carpenters were of a different opinion. The proper season for sailing had not arrived, but the captain being very ill himself, and his people being sickly, he thought it better to run the risk of a few hard gales off the Cape, than remain longer in this unhealthy place, especially as the west monsoon was setting in, during which the mortality here is yet greater than at other times.

On September 15, therefore, they set sail from Onrust, where the ship had been refitted, without returning, as is usual, into Batavia Road. The captain very fortunately procured a supply of English seamen here, otherwise he should not at last have been able to bring the ship home, for he had now lost no less than four and twenty of the hands, he had brought out of Europe, and had four and twenty more so ill, that seven of them died in their passage to the Cape.

On the 20th they anchored on the south east side of Prince's Island, in the Streight of Sunda, and the next morning the boats were sent out for wood and water; of water, however, they could not get a sufficient quantity to complete their stock, for there had not yet been rain enough to supply the springs, the wet monsoon having but just set in. At this time they had the wind so fresh from the south-east, which made this part of the island a lee shore, they could not get under sail till the 25th, when, it being more moderate, they weighed and worked over to the Java shore. In the evening they anchored in a bay called by some New Bay, and by others Canty Bay, which is formed by an island of the same name. They had fourteen fathom water,

with a fine sandy bottom. Their distance from the Java shore was about a mile and a quarter, and from the watering-place a mile and a half. New Bay is the best place for wooding and watering of any in these parts: the water is extremely clear. It is produced from a fine strong run on the Java shore, which falls down from the land into the sea, and by means of a hoase it may be laded into the boats, and the casks filled without putting them on shore, which renders the work very easy and expeditious. There is a little reef of rocks within which the boats go, and lie in as smooth water, and as effectually sheltered from any swell, as if they were in a mill-pond; nor does the reef run out so far as to be dangerous to shipping; and if a ship, when lying there, should be driven from her anchors by a wind that blows upon the shore, she may, with the greatest ease, run up the passage between New Island and Java, where there is a sufficient depth of water for the largest vessel, and a harbour, in which, being land-locked, she will find perfect security. Wood may be had any where either upon Java or New Island, neither of which, in this part, are inhabited.

Having in a few days completed their wood and water, they weighed and stood out of the Streight of Sunda, with a fine fresh gale at south-east, which did not leave them till the island of Java was seven hundred leagues behind them.

On Nov. 23, they discovered the coast of Africa; at day-break on the 28th, they made the Table Land of the Cape of Good Hope, and the same evening anchored in the Bay. Table Bay is a good harbour in summer, but not in winter; so that the Dutch will not permit any of their vessels to lie here longer than the 15th

of May, which answers to our November. After that time, all ships go to False Bay, which is well sheltered from the north west winds, which blow here with great violence.

At this place they breathed a pure air, had wholesome food, and went freely about the country, which is extremely pleasant. They found the inhabitants open, hospitable, and polite. They continued here till the 6th of January, 1769, when in the evening they set sail, and before it was dark cleared the land.

On the 20th, after a fine and pleasant passage, they made the island of St. Helena : and set sail again on the 24th. On the 30th, at midnight, they made the north-east part of the Island of Ascension, and brought to till day-light, when they ran in close to it. The captain sent a boat out to discover the anchoring place which is called Cross-hill Bay, while they kept running along the north east and north side of the island, till they came to the north west extremity of it, and in the afternoon anchored in the bay they sought. The way to find this place at once, is to bring the largest and most conspicuous hill upon the island to bear S. E. ; when the ship is in this position, the bay will be open, right in the middle between two other hills, the westernmost of which is called Cross-hill, and gives name to the Bay. Upon this hill there is a flag-staff, which if a ship brings to bear S. S. E.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. or S. E. by E. and runs in, keeping it so till she is in ten fathom water, she will be in the best part of the Bay. In their run along the north east side of the island, they observed several other small sandy Bays, in some of which the boat found good anchorage, and saw plenty of turtle, though they are not so convenient as this, where they had plenty of turtle

too. The beach here is a fine white sand ; the landing place is at some rocks, which lie about the middle of the Bay, and may be known by a ladder of ropes which hangs from top to mount them by. In the evening the captain landed a few men to turn the turtle that should come on shore during the night, and in the morning he found that they had thus secured no less than eighteen, from four hundred to six hundred weight each, and these were as many as they could well stow on the deck. As there are no inhabitants upon this island, it is a custom for the ships that touch at it to leave a letter in a bottle, with their names and destination, the date, and a few other particulars. They complied with this custom and in the evening of the 1st, weighed anchor and set sail.

March 7, they made the Western Islands, and went between St. Michael and Tercera ; in this situation they found the variation  $13^{\circ} 36'$  W. and the winds began to blow from S. W. The gale, as they got farther to the westward, increased, and on the 11th, having got W. N. W. it blew very hard, with a great sea ; they scudded before it with the foresail only, the foot rope of which suddenly breaking, the sail blew all to pieces, before they could get the yard down, though it was done instantly. This obliged them to bring the ship to, but having, with all possible expedition, bent a new foresail, and got the yard up, they bore away again ; this was the last accident that happened to them during the voyage.

On the 16th, being in latitude  $49^{\circ} 15'$  N. they got soundings. On the 18th of May, they knew by the depth of water that they were in the channel, but the wind being to the northward, they could not make land till the next day, when they saw the Star Point ; and on

the 20th, to their great joy, anchored at Spithead, after a very fine passage, and a fair wind all the way from the Cape of Good Hope.

---

---

END OF VOL. I.

---

---



## DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER

*For placing the Plates to Vol. I.*



The Dolphin laid on her beam ends, .....	page 16
Reception of Captain Byron, at Cape Virgin Mary, .....	23
The Tamur and Dolphin at anchor in Port Egremont .....	44
Queen Obeare receiving presents from Captain Wallis, on board the Dolphin, .....	201
Captain Wallis invited to the Queen's house, .....	205
The Dolphin attacked by the Indians .....	188
Captain Carteret taking possession of the Island, .....	307
Inhabitants of New Ireland visiting the Swallow .....	312
The Cutter's Crew attacked by the Indians in Eng- lish Cove .....	360
A View of the Town and Harbour of Macassar .....	288









